



HAL
open science

Projective homogeneous varieties of Picard rank one in small characteristic

Matilde Maccan

► **To cite this version:**

Matilde Maccan. Projective homogeneous varieties of Picard rank one in small characteristic. 2023. hal-04039897v2

HAL Id: hal-04039897

<https://hal.science/hal-04039897v2>

Preprint submitted on 21 Jun 2023 (v2), last revised 13 Jul 2023 (v3)

HAL is a multi-disciplinary open access archive for the deposit and dissemination of scientific research documents, whether they are published or not. The documents may come from teaching and research institutions in France or abroad, or from public or private research centers.

L'archive ouverte pluridisciplinaire **HAL**, est destinée au dépôt et à la diffusion de documents scientifiques de niveau recherche, publiés ou non, émanant des établissements d'enseignement et de recherche français ou étrangers, des laboratoires publics ou privés.



Distributed under a Creative Commons Attribution 4.0 International License

PROJECTIVE HOMOGENEOUS VARIETIES OF PICARD RANK ONE IN SMALL CHARACTERISTIC

MATILDE MACCAN

ABSTRACT. We extend to characteristic 2 and 3 the classification of projective homogeneous varieties of Picard group isomorphic to \mathbf{Z} , corresponding to parabolic subgroups with maximal reduced subgroup. The latter are all obtained as product of a maximal reduced parabolic with the kernel of a purely inseparable isogeny. This fails in type G_2 and characteristic 2, for which we exhibit an explicit counterexample and show it is the only one, thus completing the classification. We then construct new examples of projective homogeneous varieties of Picard rank two.

CONTENTS

Introduction	1
1. Preliminary work on isogenies	4
1.1. Setting and notation	4
1.2. Classifying isogenies	6
2. Case of Picard rank one	12
2.1. Reductions and notation	12
2.2. Type A_{n-1}	14
2.3. Type C_n	15
2.4. Type B_n	21
2.5. Type F_4	26
2.6. Type G_2	33
3. Consequences and higher Picard ranks	49
3.1. Consequences in rank one	50
3.2. Curves and divisors on flag varieties	52
3.3. Examples in Picard rank two	59
4. Appendix	65
4.1. The Chevalley embedding of G_2	65
4.2. Root subgroups	67
References	71

INTRODUCTION

We work in the setting of affine group schemes of finite type over an algebraically closed field k . Our object of interest are projective varieties over k , homogeneous under their automorphism group: a first class of examples is given by flag varieties, whose natural generalisation are quotients of semisimple groups by parabolic subgroups, which are not necessarily reduced.

Keywords: projective homogeneous variety, parabolic subgroup scheme, positive characteristic

2020 Mathematics Subject Classification: Primary: 14M17, Secondary: 14L15, 17B20

Date: June 21, 2023.

In characteristic zero, the structure of parabolic subgroups is well known: fixing a semisimple group, a Borel subgroup and a maximal torus $G \supset B \supset T$, there is a bijection between parabolic subgroups containing B and subsets of the set of simple roots of G : it is a classical fact that a parabolic subgroup is determined by the simple roots forming a basis for the root system of a Levi subgroup. Over a field of positive characteristic, parabolic subgroups can be nonreduced hence homogeneous spaces might have very different geometric properties: see for example the computation of the character associated to the canonical bundle in [Lau93], which shows that such varieties are in general not Fano. The easiest example is the hypersurface in $\mathbf{P}^2 \times \mathbf{P}^2$ given by the equation $x_0y_0^p + x_1y_1^p + x_2y_2^p = 0$, which is homogeneous under PGL_3 and not Fano if $p > 3$.

If the characteristic is equal to at least 5, or if the Dynkin diagram of G is simply laced (types A_n , D_n , E_6 , E_7 and E_8), Wenzel [Wen93], Haboush and Lauritzen [HL93] show that all parabolic subgroups of G can be obtained from reduced ones by fattening with Frobenius kernels and intersecting. More precisely, they are all of the form

$$G_{m_1}P^{\alpha_1} \cap \dots \cap G_{m_r}P^{\alpha_r},$$

where G_m denotes the kernel of the m -th iterated Frobenius morphism on G and P^α denotes the maximal reduced parabolic subgroup whose Levi subgroup has as basis all simple roots except for α . When no assumption on the characteristic is made, we will call them parabolic subgroups of *standard type*. The proof of [Wen93] relies heavily on the structure constants (defined over \mathbf{Z}) relative to a Chevalley basis of the Lie algebra of a simply connected semisimple group. By construction such constant are integers with absolute value strictly less than five: the hypothesis on the characteristic and on the Dynkin diagram guarantees that they do not vanish over k . This raises the natural question of how to generalize the classification of parabolic subgroups to characteristic two and three.

In this paper we manage to provide an answer to this question concerning the easiest - combinatorially speaking - class of parabolic subgroups, those having maximal reduced part equal to P^α for some simple root α of G . These subgroups correspond to homogeneous projective varieties of Picard group isomorphic to \mathbf{Z} : as illustrated later in Subsection 3.2, the Picard group of a homogeneous space G/P is free abelian with rank equal to the number of simple roots of G not belonging to the root system of a Levi subgroup of the reduced part of P . Our main result is the following, allowing us to complete the classification in all types and characteristics.

Theorem 1. *Let X be a homogeneous projective variety, over an algebraically closed field of any characteristic, with Picard group isomorphic to \mathbf{Z} . Then X is either the quotient of a simple adjoint group by a maximal reduced parabolic subgroup, or it is isomorphic to G_2/P_1 (this second case can only arise in characteristic two).*

In the above statement, P_1 is a certain exotic parabolic subgroup scheme, introduced and studied in Section 2.6.2 and Section 2.6.4. The proof of Theorem 1 articulates in two different parts: Theorem 2.1, which treats all cases but G_2 in characteristic two, and Theorem 2.17 which completes the classification.

The paper is organized as follows. In Section 1, we build on previous work of Borel and Tits [BT72], then completed and re-elaborated in [CGP15], to give a factorisation result for isogenies with simply connected source. This digression is self-contained but motivated by the fact that - in Picard rank one - purely inseparable isogenies will generalize the role of the Frobenius morphism in [Wen93]. An important ingredient is the so-called *very special isogeny*

of a simple simply connected group G , which is the quotient

$$\pi_G: G \longrightarrow \overline{G}$$

by the unique minimal noncentral subgroup of G with trivial Frobenius. It turns out (as shown in [CGP15]) that when the Dynkin diagram of G has an edge of multiplicity equal to the characteristic, such a subgroup is strictly contained in the Frobenius kernel. In particular, π_G acts as a Frobenius morphism on root subgroups associated to short roots, while it is an isomorphism on root subgroups associated to long ones. The factorisation of isogenies reads as follows, where we denote as $F_G^m: G \longrightarrow G^{(m)}$ the m -th iterated relative Frobenius homomorphism of G .

Proposition 2. *Let G be a simple and simply connected algebraic group over an algebraically closed field k . Let $f: G \rightarrow G'$ be an isogeny.*

Then there exists a unique factorisation of f as

$$f: G \xrightarrow{\pi} \overline{G} \xrightarrow{F_{\overline{G}}^m} (\overline{G})^{(m)} \xrightarrow{\rho} G',$$

where ρ is a central isogeny and π is either the identity or - when the Dynkin diagram of G has an edge of multiplicity p - the very special isogeny π_G .

We introduce and prove the first part of Theorem 1 in Section 2. As the different behaviour in type G_2 confirms, there is no way to prove this result using general geometric arguments nor working over \mathbf{Z} , so we proceed by a case-by-case analysis. The proof essentially articulates in three steps: the first one consists of some elementary reductions, showing that it is enough to prove that if P has maximal reduced subgroup and G acts faithfully on G/P , then P must be itself reduced. The second step is exploiting the explicit matricial description of the quotient

$$\mathrm{Lie} G / \mathrm{Lie} P_{\mathrm{red}},$$

seen as a representation of a Levi subgroup of P_{red} . Finally, the last step involves considering some of the structure constants (chosen so that they do not vanish, depending on the characteristic) and concluding using the notion of very special isogeny.

Next, we consider the case of characteristic 2 and type G_2 , with short simple root α_1 and long simple root α_2 . Perhaps surprisingly, the analogous strategy of proof works when the reduced part is P^{α_2} , but fails when considering P^{α_1} , due to the vanishing of structure constants. We deduce that there exist exactly two maximal p -Lie subalgebras \mathfrak{h} and \mathfrak{l} of $\mathrm{Lie} G$ strictly containing $\mathrm{Lie} P^{\alpha_1}$. We describe them explicitly and consider the corresponding subgroups of height one in G , which give rise to two new parabolic subgroups denoted $P_{\mathfrak{h}}$ and $P_{\mathfrak{l}}$. Then we study the corresponding homogeneous spaces, by means of the description of G_2 as the automorphism group of an octonion algebra, as in [SV00] and [He08]. One turns out to be isomorphic to the projective space \mathbf{P}^5 , while we realize the other as a hyperplane section of the Sp_6 -homogeneous variety of isotropic 3-dimensional subspaces in a 6-dimensional vector space (the study of the second variety, carried on in Section 2.6.4, is computational and slightly cumbersome). For the sake of brevity, computations concerning the group G_2 and its root subgroups can be found in the Appendix [4]. We conclude this part with the following result (see Proposition 2.45 for a more detailed statement), which allows in particular to end the proof of Theorem 1.

Proposition 3. *Let G be of type G_2 in characteristic two.*

Then the nonreduced parabolic subgroups of G having P^{α_1} as reduced part are either of standard type, or obtained from $P_{\mathfrak{l}}$ and $P_{\mathfrak{h}}$ by pulling back with an iterated Frobenius homomorphism.

We deduce in Section 3 the desired consequence of Theorem 1: the statement focuses exclusively on the classification of parabolic subgroups with maximal reduced part, and requires no assumptions on the characteristic of the base field.

Proposition 4. *Let G be simple and P be a parabolic subgroup of G such that its reduced subgroup is P^α for some simple root α . Then there exists an isogeny φ with source G such that*

$$P = (\ker \varphi)P^\alpha,$$

unless G is of type G_2 over a field of characteristic $p = 2$ and α is the short simple root.

We prove Proposition 4 as well as a criterion to determine when two projective homogeneous spaces with Picard group \mathbf{Z} are isomorphic as varieties. The remaining part of Section 3 is devoted to the display of a family of projective homogeneous spaces of Picard rank two, whose underlying varieties are *not of standard type*, where the last terminology means not isomorphic (as a variety) to some quotient with stabilizer a parabolic subgroup of standard type. We will follow the conventions on root systems adopted by Bourbaki [Bou68]. The statement is the following:

Proposition 5. *Consider a simple, simply connected group G over an algebraically closed field of characteristic 2 and distinct simple roots α and β such that: either G is of type B_n or C_n and the pair (α, β) is of the form (α_j, α_i) with $i < j < n$ or $j = n$ and $i < n - 1$, or G is of type F_4 and the pair (α, β) is one among*

$$(\alpha_1, \alpha_4), \quad (\alpha_2, \alpha_1), \quad (\alpha_2, \alpha_4), \quad (\alpha_3, \alpha_1), \quad (\alpha_3, \alpha_4), \quad (\alpha_4, \alpha_1).$$

Then the homogeneous space $X = G/((\ker \pi_G)P^\alpha \cap P^\beta)$ is not of standard type, where π_G denotes the very special isogeny of G .

The strategy of proof consists first in recalling and precisizing a few facts on the Białyński-Birula decomposition of G -simple projective varieties, following [Bri02]. Next we specialize the outline of this decomposition to the particular case of homogeneous spaces. This leads to the description of the Picard group and of the group of 1-cycles on $X = G/P$, as well as the definition of a finite family of contractions on X indexed by the simple roots of G not belonging to the root system of a Levi subgroup of P_{red} . More precisely, the contraction associated to a root α sends all classes of curves to a point, except for those which are numerically equivalent to the unique B -invariant curve passing through the image of the base point of X by the reflection with respect to α in the Weyl group. This construction, together with the results on automorphism groups in [Dem77], allows us to conclude. We end with a final question concerning the more general classification of parabolic subgroups in characteristic 2 and 3.

Acknowledgments. I would like to thank my PhD advisors Michel Brion and Matthieu Romagny for their precious guidance and support, as well as Pierre-Emmanuel Chaput, Philippe Gille and David Stewart for the useful suggestions.

1. PRELIMINARY WORK ON ISOGENIES

1.1. Setting and notation. In this work, k denotes an algebraically closed field of prime characteristic $p > 0$. When V is a finite-dimensional k -vector space, we adopt the convention for $\mathbf{P}(V)$ to be lines in V . By parabolic subgroup we always mean parabolic subgroup scheme. Let $G \supset B \supset T$ be respectively a semisimple, simply connected algebraic group over k , a Borel subgroup and a maximal torus contained in it. Our aim is to classify all homogeneous projective G -varieties, which are quotients of the form G/P , where P is a parabolic subgroup of G , not necessarily reduced. By conjugacy of the Borel subgroups, we might restrict ourselves

to those containing the Borel subgroup B , which we call *standard* parabolic subgroups. From now on, every parabolic subgroup will be standard, unless otherwise mentioned. Such a classification has been established in [Wen93] and [HL93], under the assumption that either $p \geq 5$ or that the root system of G relative to T is simply laced.

Let us list the main notations that are fixed throughout the paper, which mostly agree with those of [Wen93]. Concerning root systems, we follow conventions from Bourbaki [Bou68] :

- $\Phi = \Phi(G, T)$ is the root system of the pair (G, T) ,
- $\Phi^+ = \Phi(B, T)$ is the subset of positive roots associated to the Borel subgroup B ,
- Δ is the corresponding basis of simple roots,
- $W = W(G, T) = W(\Phi)$ is the Weyl group of (G, T) ,
- s_α is the reflection associated to the simple root $\alpha \in \Delta$,
- $\text{Supp}(\gamma)$ is the set of simple roots which have a nonzero coefficient in the expression of $\gamma \in \Phi$ as linear combination of simple roots,
- B^- is the opposite Borel subgroup, with corresponding set of roots being $\Phi \setminus \Phi^+$,
- U_γ ($\gamma \in \Phi$) is the root subgroup associated to γ , with corresponding root homomorphism $u_\gamma: \mathbf{G}_a \xrightarrow{\sim} U_\gamma$,
- P^α ($\alpha \in \Delta$) is the maximal reduced parabolic subgroup not containing $U_{-\alpha}$, which is generated by B and $U_{-\beta}$ with $\beta \in \Delta \setminus \{\alpha\}$,
- $F_G^m: G \rightarrow G^{(m)}$ is the m -th iterated relative Frobenius homomorphism of G ,
- $G_m := \ker F_G^m$ is the m -th Frobenius kernel.

Let us recall that the morphism F_G^m is an isogeny since it is surjective with finite kernel. Moreover, the map $\alpha \mapsto P^\alpha$ defines a bijection between simple roots and maximal reduced parabolic subgroups. More generally, under the assumptions of [Wen93], there is a bijection

$$(1.1) \quad \text{Hom}_{\text{Set}}(\Delta, \mathbf{N} \cup \{\infty\}) \longrightarrow \{\text{parabolic subgroups } G \supset P \supset B\}$$

sending a function $\varphi: \Delta \rightarrow \mathbf{N} \cup \{\infty\}$ to the subgroup scheme P_φ defined by the intersection of all maximal reduced parabolics fattened by their corresponding Frobenius kernels

$$P_\varphi := \bigcap_{\alpha \in \Delta} G_{\varphi(\alpha)} P^\alpha = \bigcap_{\alpha \in \Delta: \varphi(\alpha) \neq \infty} G_{\varphi(\alpha)} P^\alpha.$$

Let us recall that, given a parabolic subgroup P , there is always an associated function $\varphi: \Phi^+ \rightarrow \mathbf{N} \cup \{\infty\}$ (introduced in [Wen93]) given by the identity

$$U_{-\gamma} \cap P = u_{-\gamma}(\alpha_{p\varphi(\gamma)}), \quad \gamma \in \Phi^+,$$

where $\alpha_{p\infty}$ is understood to be \mathbf{G}_a . For example, the parabolic $G_m P^\alpha$ defines the function sending all positive roots to infinity, except for those containing α in their support, which assume value m .

Theorem 1.1 (Theorem 10, [Wen93]). *The parabolic subgroup P is uniquely determined by the function φ , with no assumption on the characteristic or on the Dynkin diagram of G .*

Moreover, when $p \geq 5$ or G is simply laced, the function φ is itself uniquely determined by its values on Δ via the equality

$$\varphi(\gamma) = \min\{\varphi(\alpha): \alpha \in \text{Supp}(\gamma)\},$$

giving the bijection (1.1). See [Wen93, Theorem 14] for more details. As we will see later, the last statement does not always hold in small characteristic.

The guiding idea is to mimic the known classification - written in terms of Frobenius kernels - replacing the Frobenius morphism with any noncentral isogeny (see Proposition 3.1). This motivates the preliminary study and classification of such homomorphisms.

1.2. Classifying isogenies. We now classify isogenies between simple algebraic groups, first recalling definitions and the Isogeny Theorem, then introducing the so-called *very special isogeny* π_G , whose kernel is a certain subgroup of height one defined by short roots - which only exists when the Dynkin diagram has an edge of multiplicity equal to the characteristic - and concluding with the following factorisation result: see Proposition 1.12.

Proposition. *Let G be a simple and simply connected algebraic group over k . Let $f: G \rightarrow G'$ be an isogeny. Then there exists a factorisation of f as*

$$f: G \xrightarrow{\pi} \overline{G} \xrightarrow{F_{\overline{G}}^m} (\overline{G})^{(m)} \xrightarrow{\rho} G',$$

where ρ is a central isogeny and π is either the identity or - when the Dynkin diagram of G has an edge of multiplicity p - the very special isogeny π_G .

1.2.1. Preliminaries. We shall start by reviewing what isogenies look like, in particular non-central ones. First, let us recall some notations and the statement of the Isogeny Theorem, which is proved in detail in [Ste99].

Definition 1.2. Let (G, T) and (G', T') be reductive algebraic groups over k . An *isogeny* between them is a surjective homomorphism of algebraic groups $f: G \rightarrow G'$ having finite kernel, sending the maximal torus T to the maximal torus T' . The *degree* of f is the order of its kernel.

Given an isogeny f , there is an induced map between the character groups

$$\varphi := X(f|_T): X(T') \rightarrow X(T), \quad \chi' \mapsto \chi' \circ f|_T,$$

satisfying the conditions :

- (i) both $\varphi: X(T') \rightarrow X(T)$ and its dual $\varphi^\vee: X^\vee(T) \rightarrow X^\vee(T')$ are injective,
- (ii) there exists a bijection $\Phi \leftrightarrow \Phi'$, denoted $\alpha \leftrightarrow \alpha'$, and integers $q(\alpha)$ which are all powers of p , such that

$$\varphi(\alpha') = q(\alpha)\alpha \quad \text{and} \quad \varphi^\vee(\alpha^\vee) = q(\alpha)\alpha^{\vee'} \quad \text{for all } \alpha \in \Phi.$$

Geometrically, the integers $q(\alpha)$ arise as follows: the image $f(U_\alpha)$ is a smooth connected unipotent algebraic subgroup of G' which is normalized by T' and isomorphic to the additive group \mathbf{G}_a , hence it must be of the form $U_{\alpha'}$ for a unique $\alpha' \in \Phi'$. This gives the bijection; then, using the T -action on those two root subgroups, one finds that there exists a constant $c_\alpha \in \mathbf{G}_m$ and an integer $q(\alpha) \in p^{\mathbf{N}}$ such that

$$(1.2) \quad f(u_\alpha(x)) = u_{\alpha'}(c_\alpha x^{q(\alpha)})$$

for all $x \in \mathbf{G}_a$.

Definition 1.3. A homomorphism between character groups $\varphi: X(T') \rightarrow X(T)$ satisfying conditions (i) and (ii) is called an *isogeny of root data*.

Theorem 1.4 (Isogeny Theorem). *Let (G, T) and (G', T') be reductive algebraic groups over k . Assume given an isogeny of root data $\varphi: X(T') \rightarrow X(T)$. Then there exists an isogeny $f: (G, T) \rightarrow (G', T')$ inducing φ . Moreover, f is unique up to an inner automorphism $\text{inn}(t)$ for some $t \in T'/Z(G')$.*

Proof. See [Ste99, 1.5]. □

For instance, an important class of isogenies is given by the ones having central kernel, which are characterized by the fact that the associated integers $q(\alpha)$ are all equal to 1: these are not interesting for our purpose of studying parabolic subgroups, since we may restrict ourselves in the classification to the case of a simply connected group (or an adjoint one, depending on the

desired properties). The most known example of a noncentral isogeny is an iterated Frobenius homomorphism F^m , for which $\alpha' = \alpha$ and all $q(\alpha)$ are equal to p^m . Do other isogenies exist? We shall now consider this question.

1.2.2. *Very special isogenies.* From now on we make the assumption that G is simple. The Weyl group $W = W(G, T)$ acts on roots leaving the integer q invariant: if the Dynkin diagram of G is simply laced, then there is only one orbit, hence all $q(\alpha)$ must assume the same value. This means, by the Isogeny Theorem, that up to inner automorphisms the only noncentral isogenies with source G are iterated Frobenius homomorphisms.

On the other hand, assume that the Dynkin diagram of G has a multiple edge. In this setting, there are two distinct orbits under the action of the Weyl group, corresponding to long and short roots: this allows, considering an isogeny $f: (G, T) \rightarrow (G', T')$, for two possibly distinct values of $q(\alpha)$. Let us denote as $\Phi_{<}$ and $\Phi_{>}$ the subsets of Φ consisting of short and long roots respectively, and denote the two integer values as

$$(1.3) \quad q_{<} := q(\alpha) \ (\alpha \in \Phi_{<}) \quad \text{and} \quad q_{>} := q(\alpha) \ (\alpha \in \Phi_{>}).$$

Analogously, we fix the following notation for the direct sum of root spaces associated to roots of a fixed length:

$$\mathfrak{g}_{<} := \bigoplus_{\alpha \in \Phi_{<}} \mathfrak{g}_{\alpha} = \bigoplus_{\alpha \in \Phi_{<}} \text{Lie } U_{\alpha} \quad \text{and} \quad \mathfrak{g}_{>} := \bigoplus_{\alpha \in \Phi_{>}} \mathfrak{g}_{\alpha} = \bigoplus_{\alpha \in \Phi_{>}} \text{Lie } U_{\alpha}.$$

We now recall a notion introduced in [CGP15, Section 7.1], based on previous work from Borel and Tits, and some of its properties. Also, let us remark that the assumption we will make is stronger than just asking that the group is not simply laced: to define the following notions, the characteristic needs to be $p = 2$ for types B_n , C_n and F_4 , and $p = 3$ in type G_2 . Equivalently, the group G has Dynkin diagram having an edge of multiplicity p . From now on, we will call this the *edge hypothesis*. The following result is [CGP15, Lemma 7.1.2].

Lemma 1.5. *Let G be simply connected satisfying the edge hypothesis. Then the vector subspace*

$$\mathfrak{n}_G := \langle \text{Lie } \gamma^{\vee}(\mathbf{G}_m) : \gamma \in \Phi_{<} \rangle \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{<}$$

is a p -Lie ideal of $\text{Lie } G$. Moreover, every nonzero G -submodule of $\text{Lie } G$ distinct from $\text{Lie } Z(G)$ contains \mathfrak{n}_G .

By the equivalence of categories between p -Lie subalgebras of $\text{Lie } G$ and algebraic subgroups of G of height one, the p -Lie ideal \mathfrak{n}_G lifts to a unique normal subgroup of G .

Definition 1.6. Let G be simply connected satisfying the edge hypothesis. The algebraic subgroup of height one having \mathfrak{n}_G as Lie algebra is denoted as N_G .

In particular, N_G is characterized by being the unique minimal noncentral normal subgroup of G having trivial Frobenius. For more details see [CGP15, Definition 7.1.3]. Thus, we are led to consider the homomorphism

$$\pi_G: G \rightarrow \overline{G} := G/N_G.$$

Let us remark that this is a noncentral isogeny with corresponding values $q_{<} = p$ and $q_{>} = 1$.

Definition 1.7. With the above notations, the homomorphism π_G is called the *very special isogeny* associated to the simple and simply connected algebraic group G .

The following step towards a better understanding of isogenies is the natural generalization of the above notion to the non simply connected case.

Definition 1.8. Let G be simple satisfying the edge hypothesis and let $\psi: \tilde{G} \rightarrow G$ be its simply connected cover. Let $N_{\tilde{G}}$ be the kernel of the very special isogeny of \tilde{G} defined just above. We denote as :

- N_G its schematic image via the central isogeny ψ ;
- $N_{m,\tilde{G}} := \ker(\pi_{\tilde{G}^{(m)}} \circ F_{\tilde{G}}^m) = (F_{\tilde{G}}^m)^{-1}(N_{\tilde{G}^{(m)}})$, for any $m \geq 1$;
- $N_{m,G}$ the schematic image of $N_{m,\tilde{G}}$ via the central isogeny ψ .

Let us remark that N_G is nontrivial, noncentral, normal and has trivial Frobenius. Moreover, it is minimal with such properties: let $H \subset N_G$ be another such subgroup, then $\tilde{H} := \psi^{-1}(H) \cap N_{\tilde{G}}$ is nontrivial, noncentral, normal and of height one, hence by definition contained in $N_{\tilde{G}}$. This shows that $N_G = \psi(N_{\tilde{G}}) \subset \psi(\tilde{H}) = H$.

It is now natural to ask ourselves if such a subgroup is unique, or if we can give an example of it appearing in a natural context. This is shown in Lemma 1.14 and Example 1.15 below.

Up to this point in this section we have assumed that the Dynkin diagram of G has an edge of multiplicity p . What about the other cases not satisfying the edge hypothesis, in particular those which are not treated in [Wen93]? Let us assume that either $p = 3$ and that the group G is simple of type B_n, C_n or F_4 , or that $p = 2$ and the group G is simple of type G_2 . Then an analogous construction to the subgroup N_G cannot be done for the following reason: nontrivial normal subgroups of height one correspond, under the equivalence of categories, to nonzero p -Lie ideals of $\text{Lie } G$, which do not exist due to the following result (see [Str04, 4.4]).

Lemma 1.9. *Let $p = 3$ and G be simple of type B_n, C_n for some $n \geq 2$, or F_4 , or let $p = 2$ and G simple of type G_2 . Then $\text{Lie } G$ is simple as a p -Lie algebra.*

1.2.3. *Factorising isogenies.* Let us start by recalling the following result concerning the factorisation of the Frobenius morphism (see [CGP15, Proposition 7.1.5]) :

Proposition 1.10. *Let G be simple and simply connected satisfying the edge hypothesis. Then*

- (a) *There is a factorisation of the Frobenius morphism as*

$$F_G: (G \xrightarrow{\pi_G} \overline{G} \xrightarrow{\overline{\pi}} G^{(1)})$$

which is the only nontrivial factorisation into isogenies with first step admitting no nontrivial factorisation into isogenies.

- (b) *The root system $\overline{\Phi}$ of \overline{G} is isomorphic to the dual of the root system of G .*
(c) *The bijection between Φ and $\overline{\Phi}$ defined by π_G exchanges long and short roots: denoting it as $\alpha \leftrightarrow \overline{\alpha}$, if α is long then $\overline{\alpha}$ is short and vice-versa.*
(d) *In the factorisation of point (a), the map $\overline{\pi}$ is the very special isogeny of \overline{G} .*

In particular, the restriction $(\pi_G)|_{U_\alpha}: U_\alpha \rightarrow U_{\overline{\alpha}}$ gives an isomorphism whenever α is long and a purely inseparable isogeny of degree p whenever α is short.

Lemma 1.11. *Assume $f: G \rightarrow G'$ is a noncentral isogeny with G simply connected and satisfying the edge hypothesis. If at least one value of $q(\alpha)$ is equal to 1, then necessarily $q_{>} = 1$.*

Proof. Let us consider the Lie subalgebra $\text{Lie}(\ker f) \subset \mathfrak{g}$. This is a proper G -submodule of the Lie algebra \mathfrak{g} under the adjoint action, which is not contained in $\text{Lie } Z(G)$: by Lemma 1.5, $\text{Lie}(\ker f)$ must contain all of $\mathfrak{g}_{<}$. This means that if α is a short root, then $f|_{U_\alpha}: U_\alpha \rightarrow U_{\alpha'}$ is not an isomorphism: in other words, $q_{<} \neq 1$. \square

Proposition 1.12. *Let G be a simple and simply connected algebraic group and let $f: G \rightarrow G'$ be an isogeny. Then there exists a unique factorisation of f as*

$$f: G \xrightarrow{\pi} \overline{G} \xrightarrow{\frac{F_G^m}{G}} (\overline{G})^{(m)} \xrightarrow{\rho} G',$$

where ρ is a central isogeny and π is either the identity or - when G satisfies the edge hypothesis - the very special isogeny π_G .

Proof. Let us start by considering the bijection $\Phi \leftrightarrow \Phi'$ and the corresponding integers $q(\alpha)$ associated to the isogeny f , as recalled in (1.2).

Step 1: is the isogeny central? This is equivalent to asking whether all integers $q(\alpha)$ are equal to one. If this is the case, then we are done. Next, we will hence assume that at least one value of q is nontrivial.

Step 2: does p divide $q(\alpha)$ for all roots α ? If the group is simply laced this is always the case, since q is constant. If $p = 3$ and the group is of type B_n, C_n or F_4 , or if $p = 2$ and the group is of type G_2 , this is also always the case: indeed, there exists at least one $\gamma \in \Phi$ such that $q(\gamma) \neq 1$. Equivalently, the corresponding root space satisfies $\mathfrak{g}_\gamma \subset \mathfrak{h} := \text{Lie}(\ker f)$. Since \mathfrak{h} is a nontrivial p -Lie ideal of $\text{Lie} G$, it must coincide with all of $\text{Lie} G$ thanks to Lemma 1.9.

In general, if the answer is yes, then the root subspace \mathfrak{g}_α is contained in $\text{Lie}(\ker f)$ for all roots. Since the latter is a Lie ideal of $\text{Lie} G$, taking brackets implies that the copy of \mathfrak{sl}_2 associated to each root is also contained in $\text{Lie}(\ker f)$, which thus coincides with $\text{Lie} G$. This means in particular that the Frobenius kernel of G is contained in the kernel of f , so we can factorise by the Frobenius morphism as follows

$$\begin{array}{ccc} & & f \\ & \curvearrowright & \\ G & \xrightarrow{F_G} & G^{(1)} \xrightarrow{f'} G' \end{array}$$

and go back to Step 1 replacing f by f' . Notice that this is possible, since the group $G^{(1)}$ is still simple and simply connected. Moreover, the new integers associated to the isogeny f' are exactly $q(\alpha)/p$, hence their values strictly decrease. After this step, we can hence assume that there are two distinct values $q_<$ and $q_>$ as defined in (1.3). In particular, let us remark that in this case G is not simply laced.

Step 3: this step only occurs when the Dynkin diagram of G has an edge of multiplicity p ; moreover, by Lemma 1.11 $q_> = 1$ while $q_<$ is divisible by p . This last condition means that for any short root γ , the root subspaces \mathfrak{g}_γ and $\mathfrak{g}_{-\gamma}$ are contained in $\text{Lie}(\ker f)$. This implies that

$$(\mathfrak{sl}_2)_\gamma = [\mathfrak{g}_\gamma, \mathfrak{g}_{-\gamma}] \oplus \mathfrak{g}_\gamma \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\gamma} = \text{Lie}(\gamma^\vee(\mathbf{G}_m)) \oplus \mathfrak{g}_\gamma \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\gamma} \subset \text{Lie}(\ker f),$$

hence, by definition of the subgroup N_G in the simply connected case, we have

$$\langle \text{Lie}(\gamma^\vee(\mathbf{G}_m)) : \gamma \in \Phi_{<} \rangle \bigoplus_{\gamma \in \Phi_{<}} \mathfrak{g}_\gamma =: \text{Lie} N_G \subset \text{Lie}(\ker f).$$

Since N_G is of height one, this implies that $N_G \subset \ker f$, so we can factorise by the very special isogeny as follows

$$\begin{array}{ccc} & & f \\ & \curvearrowright & \\ G & \xrightarrow{\pi_G} & G^{(1)} \xrightarrow{f'} G' \end{array}$$

and go back to Step 1. Notice that this is possible, since by Proposition 1.10, the group \overline{G} is still simple and simply connected. Moreover, we know that the bijection $\Phi \leftrightarrow \overline{\Phi}$ exchanges

long and short roots and that $(\pi_G)|_{U_\alpha}$ is an isomorphism for α long and of degree p when α is short. By denoting as $q'(-)$ the integers associated to the new isogeny f' , we then have

$$\begin{aligned} (q')_{<} &= q'(\bar{\alpha}) = q(\alpha) = q_{>} = 1, & (\alpha \text{ long}) \\ (q')_{>} &= q'(\bar{\alpha}) = q(\alpha)/p = q_{<}/p, & (\alpha \text{ short}) \end{aligned}$$

so the nontrivial integer strictly decreases after this step.

Following this procedure, one will necessarily factorise a finite number of times leading finally to a central isogeny, which is the ρ given in the statement of the proposition. Moreover, we claim that the Frobenius morphism and the very special isogeny - when it is defined - commute, in the following sense: if G is simple and simply connected, then

$$\pi_{G^{(1)}} \circ F_G = F_{\overline{G}} \circ \pi_G.$$

To prove this, let us apply the factorisation of the Frobenius morphism given in Proposition 1.10 twice to get

$$\pi_{G^{(1)}} \circ F_G = \pi_{G^{(1)}} \circ (\pi_{\overline{G}} \circ \pi_G) = (\pi_{G^{(1)}} \circ \pi_{\overline{G}}) \circ \pi_G = F_{\overline{G}} \circ \pi_G.$$

This means that we can commute π with the Frobenius and assume that it is the first morphism (or the middle one, which gives another unique factorisation) in the expression $f = \rho \circ F^m \circ \pi$. \square

Remark 1.13. The above Proposition allows us to associate to any isogeny $f: G \rightarrow G'$ between simple algebraic groups a diagram of the form

$$\begin{array}{ccc} G & \xrightarrow{f} & G' \\ \psi \uparrow & & \rho \uparrow \\ \widetilde{G} & \xrightarrow{F^m \circ \pi} & \widetilde{G}' \end{array}$$

where ψ is the simply connected cover of G and ρ is central. In particular, notice that the group $(\widetilde{G})^{(m)}$, which is the target of the morphism $F^m \circ \pi$, is simply connected and ρ is central, thus this group is the simply connected cover of G' .

The first immediate consequence of this factorisation result is the uniqueness of the subgroup N_G .

Lemma 1.14. *Let G be simple satisfying the edge hypothesis and $H \subset G$ a normal, noncentral subgroup of height one. Then H contains the subgroup N_G . In particular, such a subgroup is unique.*

Proof. The conclusion clearly holds when H equals the Frobenius kernel of G , hence we can assume that $H \neq G_1$. To prove that $N_G \subset H$ it is enough to show that $f(N_G)$ is trivial, where f is the isogeny $G \rightarrow G/H$. Consider the associated diagram given in Remark 1.13 :

$$\begin{array}{ccc} G & \xrightarrow{f} & G/H \\ \psi \uparrow & & \rho \uparrow \\ \widetilde{G} & \xrightarrow{F^m \circ \pi} & \widetilde{G}/H \end{array}$$

where π is either the identity or the very special isogeny of G . We want to show that the bottom arrow is necessarily the very special isogeny $\pi_{\widetilde{G}}$. First, the subgroup H is noncentral hence if $m = 0$ then $\pi = \pi_{\widetilde{G}}$, otherwise the bottom row would be the identity and f would be central. Moreover, $H \subsetneq G_1 = \ker(F: G \rightarrow G^{(1)})$ hence the factorisation of the isogeny $f \circ \psi$ given in Proposition 1.12 does not contain any Frobenius morphism : this means that $m = 0$

and the condition for A to be in SO_{2n+1} gives

$$\begin{aligned} Q(Ax) &= a_n^2 x_n + \sum_{j \neq n} b_j^2 x_j^2 + \sum_{i=0}^{n-1} (x_i x_{2n-i} + a_{2n-i} x_i x_n + a_i x_{2n-i} x_n) \\ &= Q(x) = x_n^2 + \sum_{i=0}^{n-1} x_i x_{2n-i}, \end{aligned}$$

which is equivalent to $a_i = 0$ for all $i \neq n$, $a_n^2 = 1$ and $b_i^2 = 0$ for all i . Moreover, under these conditions $\det A = a_n = 1$, thus we have

$$N_{\mathrm{SO}_{2n+1}} = \ker \varphi = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ b_0 \dots b_{n-1} & 1 & b_{n+1} \dots b_{2n} \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \in \mathrm{GL}_{2n+1} : b_i \in \alpha_p \right\} \simeq \alpha_p^{2n}.$$

Finally, using the equalities in Remark 2.11 concerning short roots, we can conclude that $\mathrm{Lie} N_{\mathrm{SO}_{2n+1}} = \mathfrak{g}_<$.

2. CASE OF PICARD RANK ONE

Let us recall that we are working with a semisimple algebraic group $G \supset B \supset T$ over an algebraically closed field k of characteristic $p > 0$, together with a fixed Borel subgroup and a maximal torus contained in it. Our aim is to prove that all projective homogeneous varieties under a G -action having Picard group of rank one are isomorphic (as varieties) to homogeneous spaces having reduced stabilizers, in every type except G_2 when the characteristic is $p = 2$. Let us remark that, since the Picard rank of $X = G/P$ is equal to the number of simple roots of G not contained in the root system of a Levi subgroup of P , such spaces are realized as quotients G/P such that the reduced subgroup of the stabilizer P is maximal. For a full justification of this assertion, see Section 3.2.

The main result is the following :

Theorem 2.1. *Let X be a projective algebraic variety over an algebraically closed field of characteristic $p > 0$, homogeneous under a faithful action of a smooth connected algebraic group H and having Picard group isomorphic to \mathbf{Z} .*

Then there is a simple adjoint algebraic group G and a reduced maximal parabolic subgroup $P \subset G$ such that $X = G/P$, unless $p = 2$ and H is of type G_2 .

The purpose of this Section is to prove the above Theorem: the idea is to do it explicitly case by case, since there seems to be no easy general geometric argument, as the case of type G_2 in characteristic two confirms. We proceed as follows: in Section 2.1 we perform elementary reductions to the case where $X = G/P$ with G simple and the characteristic is 2 or 3, and we recall some notation and results used in the proof. In Section 2.2 we illustrate the strategy of the proof in the simplest case of type A_{n-1} . In Sections 2.3 to 2.5 we implement the argument in types B_n , C_n and F_4 . The case of G_2 , for which the above Theorem fails in characteristic 2, is then studied separately in Section 2.6.

2.1. Reductions and notation. Let us place ourselves under the hypothesis of Theorem 2.1 and denote as H_{aff} the largest connected affine normal subgroup of H . By [BSU13, Theorem 4.1.1], there is a canonical isomorphism $X \simeq A \times Y$, where A is an abelian variety and Y is a projective homogeneous variety under a faithful H_{aff} action. Moreover, H_{aff} is semisimple and of adjoint type. Under our assumptions, the abelian variety must be a point because otherwise the Picard group of X would not be discrete; more precisely, the hypothesis $\mathrm{Pic} X = \mathbf{Z}$ implies -

by the combinatorial description of the Białyński-Birula decomposition of homogeneous spaces given in Theorem 3.12 - that we can assume H to be simple.

After such reductions, it is thus enough to prove the following statement.

Theorem 2.2. *Let G be a simple adjoint group, not of type G_2 when the characteristic is 2, and P a parabolic subgroup such that P_{red} is maximal. If G acts faithfully on $X = G/P$, then P is a reduced parabolic subgroup.*

Let us keep notations from Subsection 1.1 and recall for reference the statement of [Wen93, Theorem 14].

Theorem 2.3. *There is an injective map*

$$\begin{aligned} \text{Hom}_{\text{Set}}(\Delta, \mathbf{N} \cup \{\infty\}) &\longrightarrow \{\text{parabolic subgroups } G \supset P \supset B\} \\ \varphi &\longmapsto \bigcap_{\alpha \in \Delta: \varphi(\alpha) \neq \infty} G_{\varphi(\alpha)} P^\alpha. \end{aligned}$$

Moreover, if $p \geq 5$ or the Dynkin diagram of G is simply laced, this map is also surjective.

Remark 2.4. Let us start by taking a projective variety X which is homogeneous under the action of a simple group H . By replacing such a group with the image G of the morphism $H \rightarrow \underline{\text{Aut}}_X$ (see Remark 2.19 concerning the notation on automorphism groups) we may assume that the action is faithful. In particular, this means that there is no normal algebraic subgroup of G contained in P . However, we need to be careful in the case-by-case proof because this additional assumption - which is not restrictive on the varieties considered - forces the group G to be of adjoint type.

Let us place ourselves in the setting of Theorem 2.2 and sketch the strategy of the proof: let P be a nonreduced parabolic subgroup such that

$$P_{\text{red}} = P^\alpha$$

for some simple positive root $\alpha \in \Delta$; consider $P^\alpha \subsetneq P \subset G$, inducing the corresponding inclusions on Lie algebras:

$$\text{Lie } P^\alpha \subsetneq \text{Lie } P \subset \text{Lie } G.$$

Since we do not have any information a priori on P , we study the quotient

$$V_\alpha := \text{Lie } G / \text{Lie } P^\alpha,$$

considered as a L^α -module under the representation given by the adjoint action, where L^α denotes the Levi subgroup defined as the intersection $P^\alpha \cap (P^\alpha)^-$ with the corresponding opposite parabolic subgroup.

Let us fix some notation and state a Lemma on structure constants which will be repeatedly used in what follows :

- the decomposition of the Lie algebra in weight spaces under the T -action is

$$\mathfrak{g} = \text{Lie } G = \text{Lie } T \bigoplus_{\gamma \in \Phi} \mathfrak{g}_\gamma,$$

- when G is simply connected, a Chevalley basis of $\text{Lie } G$ is denoted as $\{X_\gamma, H_\alpha\}_{\gamma \in \Phi, \alpha \in \Delta}$. In particular, $\mathfrak{g}_\gamma = \text{Lie } U_\gamma = kX_\gamma$ and $X_\gamma = du_\gamma(1)$, where u_γ is the root homomorphism $\mathbf{G}_a \xrightarrow{\sim} U_\gamma$. Whenever the Dynkin diagram of G is not simply laced,

- $\Phi_< \subset \Phi$ and $\Phi_> \subset \Phi$ denote respectively the subsets of short and long roots, whenever a multiple edge appears in the Dynkin diagram,

- when G is simply connected and satisfies the edge hypothesis (see Section 1.2.2), N_G denotes the finite group scheme of height one whose Lie algebra is given by

$$\mathrm{Lie} N_G = \langle \mathrm{Lie}(\gamma^\vee(\mathbf{G}_m)) : \gamma \in \Phi_{<} \rangle \bigoplus_{\gamma \in \Phi_{<}} \mathfrak{g}_\gamma,$$

as recalled in Definition 1.8.

- when G is not simply connected and satisfies the edge hypothesis, N_G denotes the schematic image of $N_{\tilde{G}}$ via the universal covering map, where \tilde{G} is the simply connected cover of G - see again Definition 1.8.

Let us recall the following Lemma - see [Hu78, Chapter VII, 25.2] - which allows us to calculate all structure constants with respect to a Chevalley basis of the Lie algebra $\mathrm{Lie} G$, where G is simple and simply connected.

Lemma 2.5 (Chevalley). *Let $\{X_\gamma : \gamma \in \Phi, H_\alpha : \alpha \in \Delta\}$ be a Chevalley basis for $\mathrm{Lie} G$, where G is simple and simply connected. Then the resulting structure constants satisfy*

- $[H_\alpha, H_\beta] = 0$ for all $\alpha, \beta \in \Delta$;
- $[H_\alpha, X_\gamma] = \langle \alpha, \gamma \rangle X_\gamma$ for all $\alpha \in \Delta, \gamma \in \Phi$;
- $[X_{-\gamma}, X_\gamma]$ is a linear combination with integer coefficients of the H_α 's ;
- $[X_\gamma, X_\delta] = \pm(r+1)X_{\gamma+\delta}$ for all $\delta \neq \pm\gamma$ roots such that the δ -string through γ goes from $\gamma - r\delta$ to $\gamma + q\delta$ with $q \geq 1$, i.e. such that $\gamma + \delta$ is still a root ;
- $[X_\gamma, X_\delta] = 0$ for all roots $\delta \neq \pm\gamma$ such that $\gamma + \delta$ is not a root.

In particular, the Chevalley relation we use the most frequently is (d): it is important to recall that structure constants appearing in such equations are among $\pm 1, \pm 2, \pm 3, \pm 4$, which indicates why problems arise in characteristic 2 and 3.

The main line of argument to prove Theorem 2.2 is the following: we start by considering $X = G/P$ with G adjoint acting faithfully and P nonreduced. Then with some computation on Lie algebras, we show that - when it is defined - $N_G \subset P$, while otherwise $G_1 \subset P$. In both cases this gives a normal algebraic subgroup of G contained in the stabilizer P , which cannot exist due to Remark 2.4.

2.2. Type A_{n-1} . We start with a case whose classification is already covered by [Wen93] - without needing any assumption on the characteristic of the base field - but which is useful in order to explain the approach used in the other cases below.

Let us consider the reductive group $G = \mathrm{GL}_n$ in type A_{n-1} , its maximal torus T given by diagonal matrices of the form

$$t = \mathrm{diag}(t_1, \dots, t_n) \in \mathrm{GL}_n$$

and the Borel subgroup B of upper triangular matrices. Let us denote as $\varepsilon_i \in X(T)$ the character sending $t \mapsto t_i$, for $i = 1, \dots, n$. Then the root system $\Phi = \Phi(G, T)$ is given by

$$\Phi^+ = \{\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j, 1 \leq i < j \leq n\},$$

with basis Δ consisting of the following roots :

$$\alpha_1 = \varepsilon_1 - \varepsilon_2, \dots, \alpha_{n-1} = \varepsilon_{n-1} - \varepsilon_n.$$

Finally, assume given a nonreduced parabolic subgroup P such that $P_{\mathrm{red}} = P_m$, where $P_m := P^{\alpha_m}$ denotes the maximal reduced parabolic subgroup associated to the simple positive root

α_m for a fixed $1 \leq m < n$. Thus, the Levi subgroup L_m of this reduced parabolic subgroup is a product of a reductive group of type A_{m-1} and one of type A_{n-m-1} :

$$L_m = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} * & 0 \\ 0 & * \end{pmatrix} \right\} \simeq \mathrm{GL}_m \times \mathrm{GL}_{n-m},$$

and the two factors have as basis of simple roots $\{\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_{m-1}\}$ and $\{\alpha_{m+1}, \dots, \alpha_{n-1}\}$ respectively.

Now, let us consider the vector space $V_m = \mathrm{Lie} G / \mathrm{Lie} P_m$. Since

$$\{\gamma \in \Phi^+ : \alpha_m \in \mathrm{Supp}(\gamma)\} = \{\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j, i \leq m < j\},$$

the root spaces in V_m are of the form $\mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_i + \varepsilon_j} = kE_{ji}$, for $i \leq m < j$, where E_{ji} denotes the square matrix of order n having all zero entries except the (j, i) -th entry which is equal to 1. Concretely, V_m consists as L_m -module of all matrices M of size $(n-m) \times m$. The action of L_m on V_m is given by

$$(A, B) \cdot M = \begin{pmatrix} A & 0 \\ 0 & B \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ M & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} A^{-1} & 0 \\ 0 & B^{-1} \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ BMA^{-1} & 0 \end{pmatrix} = BMA^{-1},$$

for all $A \in \mathrm{GL}_m$, $B \in \mathrm{GL}_{n-m}$. This just corresponds to the natural action of $\mathrm{GL}_m \times \mathrm{GL}_{n-m}$ on $\mathrm{Hom}_k(k^m, k^{n-m})$. In particular, V_m is an irreducible L_m -module.

Since $\mathrm{Lie} P / \mathrm{Lie} P_m$ is an L_m -submodule of V_m and we assumed P to be nonreduced, this implies $\mathrm{Lie} P = \mathrm{Lie} G$ hence $G_1 \subset P$. Under our assumptions, by Remark 2.4 we get a contradiction. In other words, under the hypothesis of maximality of the reduced subgroup, we find that there are no new varieties other than those of the known classification. In the following subsections we will treat the other cases - not included in Wenzel's article - where two different root lengths are involved.

Remark 2.6. What does this case correspond to, geometrically, on the level of varieties? We know by [Wen93] that $P_{\mathrm{red}} = P^{\alpha_m}$ implies $P = G_r P^{\alpha_m}$ for some $r \geq 0$, hence

$$X = G/G_r P^{\alpha_m} \simeq G^{(r)} / (P^{\alpha_m})^{(r)} \simeq G/P^{\alpha_m} = \mathrm{Grass}_{m,n}$$

is isomorphic to the Grassmannian of m -th dimensional vector subspaces in k^n , equipped with the natural $G = \mathrm{GL}_n$ -action, twisted by the r -th iterated Frobenius morphism. In particular, assuming faithfulness of the action implies $r = 0$.

2.3. Type C_n . Let us consider the group $\tilde{G} = \mathrm{Sp}_{2n}$ in type C_n , with $n \geq 2$ in characteristic $p = 2$ or 3 . Defining \tilde{G} as relative to the skew form $b(x, y) = \sum_{i=1}^n x_i y_{2n+1-i} - x_{2n+1-i} y_i$ on k^{2n} , one has

$$\tilde{G} = \left\{ X \in \mathrm{GL}_{2n} : {}^t X \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \Omega_n \\ -\Omega_n & 0 \end{pmatrix} X = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \Omega_n \\ -\Omega_n & 0 \end{pmatrix} \right\}, \quad \text{where } \Omega_n = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 0 & \ddots & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}.$$

Deriving this condition gives as Lie algebra

$$\begin{aligned} \mathrm{Lie} \tilde{G} &= \left\{ M \in \mathfrak{gl}_{2n} : {}^t M \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \Omega_n \\ -\Omega_n & 0 \end{pmatrix} + \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \Omega_n \\ -\Omega_n & 0 \end{pmatrix} M = 0 \right\} \\ &= \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} A & B \\ C & -A^\# \end{pmatrix} \in \mathfrak{gl}_{2n} : B = B^\# \text{ and } C = C^\# \right\}, \end{aligned}$$

where for any square matrix X of order n we denote as $X^\#$ the matrix $\Omega_n {}^t X \Omega_n$, i.e.

$$(2.1) \quad (X^\#)_{i,j} = X_{n+1-j, n+1-i}.$$

Remark 2.7. Next, let us consider as maximal torus T the one given by diagonal matrices of the form

$$t = \text{diag}(t_1, \dots, t_n, t_n^{-1}, \dots, t_1^{-1}) \in \text{GL}_{2n}$$

and denote as $\varepsilon_i \in X^*(T)$ the character sending $t \mapsto t_i$, for $i = 1, \dots, n$. A direct computation gives the following root spaces in $\text{Lie } \tilde{G}$:

$$\begin{aligned} \mathfrak{g}_{2\varepsilon_i} &= k \begin{pmatrix} 0 & E_{i,n+1-i} \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = k \begin{pmatrix} 0 & E_{ii}\Omega_n \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \\ \mathfrak{g}_{-2\varepsilon_i} &= k \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ E_{n+1-i,i} & 0 \end{pmatrix} = k \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ \Omega_n E_{ii} & 0 \end{pmatrix}, & 1 \leq i \leq n, \\ \mathfrak{g}_{\varepsilon_i + \varepsilon_j} &= k \begin{pmatrix} 0 & E_{i,n+1-j} + E_{j,n+1-i} \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = k \begin{pmatrix} 0 & (E_{ij} + E_{ji})\Omega_n \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \\ \mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j} &= k \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ E_{n+1-i,j} + E_{n+1-j,i} & 0 \end{pmatrix} = k \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ \Omega_n(E_{ij} + E_{ji}) & 0 \end{pmatrix}, & i < j, \\ \mathfrak{g}_{\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j} &= k \begin{pmatrix} E_{ij} & 0 \\ 0 & -E_{n+1-j,n+1-i} \end{pmatrix} = k \begin{pmatrix} E_{ij} & 0 \\ 0 & -E_{ij}^\# \end{pmatrix}, \\ \mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_i + \varepsilon_j} &= k \begin{pmatrix} E_{ji} & 0 \\ 0 & -E_{n+1-i,n+1-j} \end{pmatrix} = k \begin{pmatrix} E_{ji} & 0 \\ 0 & -E_{ji}^\# \end{pmatrix}, & i < j, \end{aligned}$$

where E_{ij} denotes the square matrix of order n with zero entries except for the (i, j) -th which is equal to one.

The root system $\Phi = \Phi(\tilde{G}, T)$ is thus indeed

$$\Phi^+ = \{\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j, \varepsilon_i + \varepsilon_j, 1 \leq i < j \leq n\} \cup \{2\varepsilon_i, 1 \leq i \leq n\},$$

having chosen as Borel subgroup the one given by all upper triangular matrices in $\tilde{G} \subset \text{GL}_{2n}$. The corresponding basis Δ consists of the following roots :

$$(2.2) \quad \alpha_1 = \varepsilon_1 - \varepsilon_2, \dots, \alpha_{n-1} = \varepsilon_{n-1} - \varepsilon_n, \alpha_n = 2\varepsilon_n.$$

2.3.1. *Reduced parabolic P_n .* Still considering the group $\tilde{G} = \text{Sp}_{2n}$, denote as P_n the maximal reduced parabolic subgroup associated to the long simple positive root α_n : in a more intrinsic way, this subgroup is the stabilizer of an isotropic vector subspace $W \subset V$ of dimension n , where $\tilde{G} = \text{Sp}(V)$. In particular, W is the span of e_1, \dots, e_n , where $(e_i)_{i=1}^{2n}$ denotes the standard basis of k^{2n} . Moreover, let us denote as P_n^- the opposite parabolic subgroup and as L_n their common Levi subgroup, so that

$$\begin{aligned} P_n &= \text{Stab}(W \subset V) \\ P_n^- &= \text{Stab}(W^* \subset V) \\ L_n &= P_n \cap P_n^- = \text{GL}(W) \simeq \text{GL}_n, \end{aligned}$$

where $W \oplus W^* = V$. Let us also remark that L has root system Ψ given by

$$\Psi^+ = \{\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j, 1 \leq i < j \leq n\},$$

corresponding to a reductive group of type A_{n-1} having as basis $\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_{n-1}$. This can be visualized in the following block decomposition :

$$L_n = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} A & 0 \\ 0 & -(A^{-1})^\# \end{pmatrix} : A \in \text{GL}(W) \simeq \text{GL}_n \right\} \subset \tilde{G}.$$

First, the Lie algebra of P_n is

$$\mathrm{Lie} P_n = \mathrm{Lie} B \bigoplus_{i < j} \mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_i + \varepsilon_j} = \bigoplus_{i < j} (\mathfrak{g}_{\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_i + \varepsilon_j}) \bigoplus_{i < j} \mathfrak{g}_{\varepsilon_i + \varepsilon_j} \bigoplus_i \mathfrak{g}_{2\varepsilon_i}.$$

For our purposes it is useful to study the L_n -action on the vector space

$$V_n := \mathrm{Lie} \tilde{G} / \mathrm{Lie} P_n = \bigoplus_{i < j} \mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j} \bigoplus_i \mathfrak{g}_{-2\varepsilon_i}.$$

Lemma 2.8. *The L_n -module V_n is isomorphic to the dual of the standard representation of GL_n on $\mathrm{Sym}^2(k^n)$.*

Proof. Indeed, the root spaces we are interested in have been computed in Remark 2.7. Those equalities imply that a matrix in V_n is of the form

$$\begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ \Omega_n X & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad \text{with } X \in \mathrm{Sym}^2(k^n),$$

thus the dual action of $A \in \mathrm{GL}_n \simeq L_n$ can be computed as follows:

$${}^t A^{-1} \cdot X \simeq \begin{pmatrix} {}^t A^{-1} & 0 \\ 0 & -({}^t A)^\sharp \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ \Omega_n X & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} {}^t A & 0 \\ 0 & -({}^t A^{-1})^\sharp \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ -\Omega_n A X {}^t A & 0 \end{pmatrix} \simeq A X {}^t A.$$

This gives the desired isomorphism between the two GL_n -modules.

Let us remark that if we are working over a field of characteristic $p = 2$, the L_n -module V_n contains a simple L_n -submodule, namely

$$\left\{ \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ \cdot & c_1 \\ \cdot & \cdot \\ c_n & 0 \end{pmatrix}, c_i \in k \right\} = \bigoplus_{i=1}^n \mathfrak{g}_{-2\varepsilon_i},$$

which is isomorphic to the dual of the standard representation of GL_n on k^n , twisted once by the Frobenius morphism. \square

Proposition 2.9. *Assume given a nonreduced parabolic subgroup P such that $P_{\mathrm{red}} = P_n$. Then $\mathrm{Lie} P = \mathrm{Lie} \tilde{G}$ or $\mathrm{Lie} P = \mathrm{Lie} P_n + \mathfrak{g}_{<}$. If $p = 3$, then necessarily $\mathrm{Lie} P = \mathrm{Lie} \tilde{G}$.*

Proof. Let us consider the nonzero vector space $\mathrm{Lie} P / \mathrm{Lie} P_n$, which is an L_n -submodule of V_n . The latter being isomorphic to $\mathrm{Sym}^2(k^n)^*$ by Lemma 2.8, we have that

- (a) either $\mathrm{Lie} P / \mathrm{Lie} P_n$ contains all of the weight spaces $\mathfrak{g}_{-2\varepsilon_i}$ associated to long negative roots,
- (b) or it does not contain any of them.

Let us start by (a) and assume $\mathfrak{g}_{-2\varepsilon_i} \subset \mathrm{Lie} P$ for all i . In order to prove that $\mathrm{Lie} P = \mathrm{Lie} \tilde{G}$, it is enough to show that for any $i < j$, the Chevalley vector $X_{-\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j}$ also belongs to $\mathrm{Lie} P$. For this, let us consider roots

$$\begin{aligned} \gamma &= \varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j, & \text{satisfying } X_\gamma &\in \mathrm{Lie} L_n \subset \mathrm{Lie} P, \\ \delta &= -2\varepsilon_i, & \text{satisfying } X_\delta &\in \mathrm{Lie} P \text{ by our last assumption.} \end{aligned}$$

Thus, $\gamma + \delta = -\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j$ is still a root while $\delta - \gamma = -3\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j$ is not: applying Lemma 2.5 gives

$$[X_{\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j}, X_{-2\varepsilon_i}] = \pm X_{-\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j} \in \mathrm{Lie} P$$

as wanted.

Let us place ourselves in the hypothesis of (b) and assume that no root subspace associated to a negative long root is in $\mathrm{Lie} P$. Since by assumption P is nonreduced, $\mathrm{Lie} P_n \subsetneq \mathrm{Lie} P$ so

there must be at least one short root of the form $-\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j$ satisfying $X_{-\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j} \in \text{Lie } P$. We will now prove that this implies all short roots $-\varepsilon_l - \varepsilon_m$ for $l < m$ belong to $\text{Lie } P$, hence showing $\text{Lie } P = \text{Lie } P_n + \mathfrak{g}_<$.

First, assume $l \neq i, j$ and consider roots

$$\begin{aligned}\gamma &= -\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j, \quad \text{satisfying } X_\gamma \in \text{Lie } P \text{ by assumption,} \\ \delta &= -\varepsilon_l + \varepsilon_i, \quad \text{satisfying } X_\delta \in \text{Lie } L_n \subset \text{Lie } P.\end{aligned}$$

In this case, $\gamma + \delta = -\varepsilon_l - \varepsilon_j$ is still a root while $\delta - \gamma = -\varepsilon_l + 2\varepsilon_i + \varepsilon_j$ is not: applying Lemma 2.5 gives

$$[X_{-\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j}, X_{-\varepsilon_l + \varepsilon_i}] = \pm X_{-\varepsilon_l - \varepsilon_j} \in \text{Lie } P.$$

Now, let us fix any $l < m$ satisfying $l, m \neq j$ and consider roots

$$\begin{aligned}\gamma &= \varepsilon_j - \varepsilon_m, \quad \text{satisfying } X_\gamma \in \text{Lie } L_n \subset \text{Lie } P, \\ \delta &= -\varepsilon_l - \varepsilon_j, \quad \text{satisfying } X_\delta \in \text{Lie } P \text{ by the last step.}\end{aligned}$$

Thus, $\gamma + \delta = -\varepsilon_l - \varepsilon_m$ is still a root while $\delta - \gamma = -\varepsilon_l - 2\varepsilon_j + \varepsilon_m$ is not: applying Lemma 2.5 gives

$$[X_{\varepsilon_j - \varepsilon_m}, X_{-\varepsilon_l - \varepsilon_j}] = \pm X_{-\varepsilon_l - \varepsilon_m} \in \text{Lie } P.$$

If we are working over a field of characteristic $p = 3$, the representation of GL_n acting on $\text{Sym}^2(k^n)$ is already an irreducible one: this means that V_n is an irreducible L_n -module. Hence the nonzero submodule $\text{Lie } P / \text{Lie } P_n$ must coincide with all of V_n ; equivalently, $\text{Lie } P = \text{Lie } \tilde{G}$ as wanted. \square

Proof. (of Theorem 2.2 in type C_n when $P_{\text{red}} = P_n$)

Let G be simple adjoint of type C_n and $X = G/P$ with a faithful G -action such that $P_{\text{red}} = P^{\alpha_n}$ and P is nonreduced. Define $\tilde{P} \subset \tilde{G} = \text{Sp}_{2n}$ as being the preimage of P in the simply connected cover: it is a nonreduced parabolic subgroup satisfying $\tilde{P}_{\text{red}} = P_n$. When $p = 2$, the above Proposition implies that

$$\langle \text{Lie}(\gamma^\vee(\mathbf{G}_m)) : \gamma \in \Phi_{<} \rangle \oplus \mathfrak{g}_< = \text{Lie } N_{\tilde{G}} \subset \text{Lie } \tilde{P},$$

hence by considering the image in the adjoint quotient we get $N_G \subset P$, which is a contradiction by Remark 2.4. If $p = 3$ then the above Proposition implies that $\text{Lie } \tilde{P} = \text{Lie } \tilde{G}$, hence the Frobenius kernel satisfies $\tilde{G}_1 \subset \tilde{P}$, and its image in the adjoint quotient is a normal subgroup of G contained in P , which gives again a contradiction. Therefore in both cases P must be a smooth parabolic. \square

2.3.2. Reduced parabolic P_m , $m < n$. Let us consider again a k -vector space V of dimension $2n$ and denote as \tilde{G} the group $\text{Sp}_{2n} = \text{Sp}(V)$, of type C_n with $n \geq 2$ and k of characteristic $p = 2$ or 3 . Its root system has been recalled in (2.2). Let us fix an integer $1 \leq m < n$ and consider - keeping the notation recalled at the beginning of this subsection - the maximal reduced parabolic

$$P_m := P^{\alpha_m},$$

associated to the short simple root α_m , which is the subgroup scheme stabilizing an isotropic vector subspace of dimension m : let us denote the latter as W . Then, P_m also stabilizes its orthogonal with respect to the symplectic form on V : denoting as P_m^- the opposite parabolic subgroup and as L_m their common Levi subgroup, one finds

$$\begin{aligned}P_m &= \text{Stab}(W \subset W^\perp \subset V) = \text{Stab}(W \subset W \oplus U \subset V) \\ P_m^- &= \text{Stab}(W^* \subset (W^*)^\perp \subset V) = \text{Stab}(W \subset W^* \oplus U \subset V) \\ L_m &= P_m \cap P_m^- = \text{GL}(W) \times \text{Sp}(U) \simeq \text{GL}_m \times \text{Sp}_{2n-2m}.\end{aligned}$$

In other words, the choice of such a Levi subgroup corresponds to fixing a vector subspace U satisfying $V = W \oplus U \oplus W^*$. Let us also remark that L has root system Ψ given by

$$\Psi^+ = \{\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j, i < j \leq m\} \cup \{\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j, \varepsilon_i + \varepsilon_j, m < i < j\} \cup \{2\varepsilon_j, m < j\}.$$

This can be visualized in the following block decomposition :

$$L_m = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} A & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & B & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -(A^{-1})^\# \end{pmatrix} : A \in \mathrm{GL}(W), B \in \mathrm{Sp}(U) \right\} \subset P_m = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} * & * & * \\ 0 & * & * \\ 0 & 0 & * \end{pmatrix} \right\}$$

Proposition 2.10. *Assume given a nonreduced parabolic subgroup P such that $P_{\mathrm{red}} = P_m$. Then $\mathrm{Lie} P = \mathrm{Lie} \tilde{G}$ or $\mathrm{Lie} P = \mathrm{Lie} P_m + \mathfrak{g}_<$. If $p = 3$, then necessarily $\mathrm{Lie} P = \mathrm{Lie} \tilde{G}$.*

Proof. The Lie algebra of P_m contains all root subspaces except for those associated to negative roots containing α_m in their support, hence

$$V_m := \mathrm{Lie} \tilde{G} / \mathrm{Lie} P_m = \left(\bigoplus_{i < j \leq m} \mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j} \bigoplus_{j \leq m} \mathfrak{g}_{-2\varepsilon_j} \right) \bigoplus_{i \leq m < j} (\mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_i + \varepsilon_j})$$

More concretely, since $L_m = \mathrm{Stab}(W) \cap \mathrm{Stab}(W^*)$, the Levi subgroup acts on V_m as follows. First, a matrix in

$$\left(\bigoplus_{i < j \leq m} \mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j} \bigoplus_{j \leq m} \mathfrak{g}_{-2\varepsilon_j} \right)$$

is of the form

$$\begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ \Omega_m X & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

with $X \in \mathrm{Sym}^2(W)$, and the L_m -action on it is given by

$$\begin{aligned} (A, B) \cdot X &\simeq \begin{pmatrix} A & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & B & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -(A^{-1})^\# \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ X & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} A^{-1} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & B^{-1} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -A^\# \end{pmatrix} \\ &= \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ -\Omega_m({}^t A^{-1} X A^{-1}) & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \simeq {}^t A^{-1} X A^{-1}, \end{aligned}$$

hence this L_m -module is isomorphic to the dual of the standard representation of GL_m acting on $\mathrm{Sym}^2(k^m)$.

Let us assume that the characteristic of the base field is $p = 2$: then $\mathrm{Sym}^2(W)$ has an irreducible L_m -submodule given by $\bigoplus_{j \leq m} \mathfrak{g}_{-2\varepsilon_j}$: this proves that, once such a root subspace is contained in $\mathrm{Lie} P$ for some $j \leq m$, then all root subspaces associated to long negative roots are. If $p = 3$, then $\mathrm{Sym}^2(W)$ is already an irreducible submodule itself, hence it is either contained in $\mathrm{Lie} P / \mathrm{Lie} P_m$ or has trivial intersection with it.

On the other hand, by Remark 2.7, an element of

$$\bigoplus_{i \leq m < j} (\mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_i + \varepsilon_j}) =: M$$

is of the form

$$\begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ Y & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & Y^\flat & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad \text{where } Y^\flat := \Omega_m {}^t Y \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \Omega_{n-m} \\ \Omega_{n-m} & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

with $Y \in \text{Hom}_k(W, U)$. This gives as L_m -action

$$(A, B) \cdot Y \simeq \begin{pmatrix} A & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & B & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -(A^{-1})^\sharp \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ Y & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & Y^\flat & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} A^{-1} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & B^{-1} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -A^\sharp \end{pmatrix} \simeq BYA^{-1},$$

because B being an element of $\text{Sp}(U)$ implies

$$(A^{-1})^\sharp Y^\flat B^{-1} = \Omega_m {}^t A^{-1} {}^t Y^t B \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \Omega_{n-m} \\ -\Omega_{n-m} & 0 \end{pmatrix} = (BYA^{-1})^\flat.$$

Thus, M is isomorphic as an L_m -module to the representation

$$\text{GL}_m \times \text{Sp}_{2n-2m} \curvearrowright \text{Hom}_k(k^m, k^{2n-2m}), \quad (A, B) \cdot Y = BYA^{-1}$$

This means in particular that M is an irreducible L_m -module, since the Weyl group acts transitively on the set of its weights.

Now, let us go back to the parabolic subgroup P : being nonreduced, $\text{Lie } P / \text{Lie } P_m$ is a non-trivial L_m -submodule of V_m . We already know that assuming such a quotient to contain $\mathfrak{g}_{-2\varepsilon_j}$ implies it contains all of them, thus we still need three claims to conclude the proof:

- (a) assuming $\text{Lie } P / \text{Lie } P_m$ to contain a subspace associated to a long negative root implies it also contains a subspace associated to a short negative root;
- (b) assuming it to contain a subspace associated to a short negative root implies it contains all of them;
- (c) when $p = 3$, assuming it to contain a subspace associated to a short negative root implies it also contains a subspace associated to a long negative root.

For (a), assume $\mathfrak{g}_{-2\varepsilon_j} \subset \text{Lie } P$ for some $j \leq m$, then consider roots

$$\begin{aligned} \gamma &= -2\varepsilon_j, & \text{satisfying } X_\gamma &\in \text{Lie } P \\ \delta &= \varepsilon_j - \varepsilon_n, & \text{satisfying } X_\delta &\in \text{Lie } B \subset \text{Lie } P. \end{aligned}$$

Since $\gamma + \delta$ is a root and $\delta - \gamma$ is not, Lemma 2.5 yields

$$[X_{-2\varepsilon_j}, X_{\varepsilon_j - \varepsilon_n}] = \pm X_{-\varepsilon_j - \varepsilon_n} \in \text{Lie } P.$$

Let us remark that (a) is automatically true when $p = 3$ due to the irreducibility of the L_m -module $\text{Sym}^2(W)$, without needing to consider any structure constant.

For (b), first assume some $\mathfrak{g}_\eta \subset M$ is also contained in $\text{Lie } P$. Then $M \subset \text{Lie } P$ because of its irreducibility as L_m -submodule of V_m . Moreover, fixing $i < j \leq m$ and applying Lemma 2.5 to $\gamma = -\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_n$ and $\delta = -\varepsilon_j + \varepsilon_n$, satisfying $X_\gamma, X_\delta \in M$, we obtain

$$[X_{-\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_n}, X_{-\varepsilon_j + \varepsilon_n}] = \pm X_{-\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j} \in \text{Lie } P.$$

Thus (b) holds in this case. On the other hand, let us start by assuming that $\mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j} \subset \text{Lie } P$ for some $i < j \leq m$. Then, applying Lemma 2.5 to $\gamma = -\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j$ and $\delta = \varepsilon_j - \varepsilon_n \in \Phi^+$ yields

$$[X_{-\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j}, X_{\varepsilon_j - \varepsilon_n}] = \pm X_{-\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_n} \in \text{Lie } P$$

so we conclude that some $\mathfrak{g}_\nu \subset M$ is contained in $\text{Lie } P$ and conclude by the beginning of the proof of (b).

For (c) it is enough to use (b) and the irreducibility of the L_m -submodule $\text{Sym}^2(W)$ when $p = 3$. \square

Proof. (of Theorem 2.2 in type C_n when $P_{\text{red}} = P_m$)

Let G be simple adjoint of type C_n and $X = G/P$ with a faithful G -action such that $P_{\text{red}} = P^{\alpha_m}$ and P is nonreduced. Define $\tilde{P} \subset \tilde{G} = \text{Sp}_{2n}$ as being the preimage of P in the simply

Asking the above quantity to be equal to $Q(x)$ gives the following conditions:

$$2h = 0, \quad f_i = -2g_{2n-i}, \quad f_{2n-i} = g_i, \quad D = -A^\sharp, \quad C = -C^\sharp, \quad B = -B^\sharp,$$

where we keep the notation (2.1). Moreover, the matrices $\Omega_n B$ and $\Omega_n C$ have zero diagonal. Since the group considered is special orthogonal, the last condition on the determinant implies that the trace of the matrix must be zero hence $h = 0$ also in characteristic 2. The result is thus

$$\text{Lie SO}_{2n+1} = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} A & -2\Omega_n w & B \\ {}^t v & 0 & {}^t w \\ C & -2\Omega_n v & -A^\sharp \end{pmatrix} \in \mathfrak{gl}_{2n+1} : C = -C^\sharp, B = -B^\sharp, c_{n+1-i,i} = b_{n+1-i,i} = 0 \right\}$$

Remark 2.11. Denoting, analogously to the type C_n , as $\varepsilon_i \in X(T)$ the character $t \mapsto t_i$ for $1 \leq i \leq n$, the root spaces are the following :

$$\begin{aligned} \mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_i} &= k \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ {}^t e_i & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -2e_{n+1-i} & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \\ \mathfrak{g}_{\varepsilon_i} &= k \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -2e_i & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & {}^t e_{n+1-i} \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, & 1 \leq i \leq n, \\ \mathfrak{g}_{\varepsilon_i + \varepsilon_j} &= k \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & (E_{ij} + E_{ji})\Omega_n \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \\ \mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j} &= k \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ \Omega_n(E_{ij} + E_{ji}) & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, & i < j, \\ \mathfrak{g}_{\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j} &= k \begin{pmatrix} E_{ij} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -E_{ij}^\sharp \end{pmatrix}, \\ \mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_i + \varepsilon_j} &= k \begin{pmatrix} E_{ji} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -E_{ji}^\sharp \end{pmatrix}, & i < j, \end{aligned}$$

where e_i denotes the standard basis of k^n and E_{ij} the square matrix of order n with all zero entries except for the (i, j) -th which is equal to one.

We thus verify that the root system $\Phi = \Phi(G, T)$ is given by

$$\Phi^+ = \{\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j, \varepsilon_i + \varepsilon_j, 1 \leq i < j \leq n\} \cup \{\varepsilon_i, 1 \leq i \leq n\},$$

with basis Δ consisting of the following roots :

$$(2.3) \quad \alpha_1 = \varepsilon_1 - \varepsilon_2, \dots, \alpha_{n-1} = \varepsilon_{n-1} - \varepsilon_n, \alpha_n = \varepsilon_n.$$

2.4.2. Reduced parabolic P_n . Going back to our setting, let us consider the maximal reduced parabolic subgroup $P_n = P^{\alpha_n}$ associated to the short simple root α_n , i.e. the stabilizer of the isotropic vector subspace $W = ke_0 \oplus \dots \oplus ke_{n-1} \subset V$ of dimension n , where $G = \text{SO}(V)$ and $(e_i)_{i=0}^{2n}$ denotes the standard basis of k^{2n+1} . Since its Levi subgroup $L_n = P_n \cap P_n^-$ stabilizes

both W and its dual $W^* = ke_{n+1} \oplus \cdots \oplus ke_{2n}$, we conclude that it is of the form

$$L_n = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} A & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & (A^{-1})^\sharp \end{pmatrix} : A \in \mathrm{GL}(W) \simeq \mathrm{GL}_n \right\} \subset P_n = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} * & * & * \\ 0 & * & * \\ 0 & 0 & * \end{pmatrix} \right\} \subset G,$$

where $V = W \oplus ke_n \oplus W^*$. In particular, L_n is isomorphic to GL_n , with root system Ψ given by

$$\Psi^+ = \{\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j, 1 \leq i < j \leq n\}.$$

Proposition 2.12. *Assume given a nonreduced parabolic subgroup P such that $P_{\mathrm{red}} = P_n$. Then $\mathrm{Lie} P = \mathrm{Lie} G$ or $\mathrm{Lie} P = \mathrm{Lie} P_n + \mathfrak{g}_<$. If $p = 3$, then necessarily $\mathrm{Lie} P = \mathrm{Lie} G$.*

Proof. First, by definition of P_n its Lie algebra is given by

$$\mathrm{Lie} P_n = \mathrm{Lie} L_n \bigoplus_{i < j} \mathfrak{g}_{\varepsilon_i + \varepsilon_j} \bigoplus_i \mathfrak{g}_{\varepsilon_i},$$

Since P is assumed to be nonreduced, $\mathrm{Lie} P_n \subsetneq \mathrm{Lie} P$ hence :

- (1) either there is some i such that $\mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_i} \subset \mathrm{Lie} P$,
- (2) or there is some $i < j$ such that $\mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j} \subset \mathrm{Lie} P$.

Let us start by assuming (1) and fix such an index i . To show that all other $\mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_j}$ are then contained in $\mathrm{Lie} P$, let us consider the L_n -module

$$V_n := \mathrm{Lie} G / \mathrm{Lie} P_n = \bigoplus_{i < j} \mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j} \bigoplus_i \mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_i}.$$

By Remark 2.11, a matrix in $\bigoplus_{i=1}^n \mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_i}$ is of the form

$$\begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ {}^t v & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -2\Omega_n v & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

for $v \in k^n$, and the dual L_n -action on it is given by

$$(2.4) \quad {}^t A^{-1} \cdot v = \begin{pmatrix} {}^t A^{-1} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & {}^t A^\sharp \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ {}^t v & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -2\Omega_n v & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} {}^t A & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & ({}^t A^{-1})^\sharp \end{pmatrix}$$

$$(2.5) \quad = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ {}^t(Av) & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -2\Omega_n Av & 0 \end{pmatrix} \simeq Av$$

In particular, $\bigoplus_{i=1}^n \mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_i}$ is a simple L_n -module, isomorphic to the dual of the standard representation of GL_n on k^n . Thus, if a root subspace associated to some $-\varepsilon_i$ is contained in $\mathrm{Lie} P$, all of the $\mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_j}$ are too.

Let us assume instead that (2) holds: then, by repeating the same exact reasoning done in case (b) of the preceding subsection, we show that $\mathrm{Lie} P$ contains all weight spaces associated to long roots. This is due to the fact that the argument above only involves roots of the form $\pm(\varepsilon_l \pm \varepsilon_m)$. Moreover, assume $i \neq n$ and consider roots

$$\begin{aligned} \gamma &= \varepsilon_n, & \text{satisfying } X_\gamma &\in \mathrm{Lie} L_n \subset \mathrm{Lie} P \\ \delta &= -\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_n, & \text{satisfying } X_\delta &\in \mathrm{Lie} P \text{ by our last assumption.} \end{aligned}$$

Thus, $\gamma + \delta = -\varepsilon_i$ is still a root while $\delta - \gamma = -\varepsilon_i - 2\varepsilon_n$ is not: applying Lemma 2.5 gives

$$[X_{\varepsilon_n}, X_{-\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_n}] = \pm X_{-\varepsilon_i} \in \mathrm{Lie} P.$$

In conclusion, when $p = 2$ we have shown that condition (2) implies $\text{Lie } P = \text{Lie } G$, while assuming condition (1) to be true and (2) to be false implies $\text{Lie } P = \text{Lie } P_n + \mathfrak{g}_<$.

If $p = 3$ then the above reasoning still holds; the only remark that we need to add is that $\mathfrak{g}_< \subset \text{Lie } P$ implies that there is a long negative root ν satisfying $\mathfrak{g}_\nu \subset \text{Lie } P / \text{Lie } P_n$. For this, let us consider roots

$$\gamma = -\varepsilon_1 \text{ and } \delta = -\varepsilon_n, \text{ satisfying } X_\gamma, X_\delta \in \text{Lie } P \text{ by our last assumption.}$$

Thus, $\gamma + \delta = -\varepsilon_1 - \varepsilon_n$ is still a root, $\gamma - \delta = -\varepsilon_1 + \varepsilon_n$ is too, while $\gamma - 2\delta = -\varepsilon_1 + 2\varepsilon_n$ is not: applying Lemma 2.5 gives

$$[X_{-\varepsilon_1}, X_{-\varepsilon_n}] = \pm 2X_{-\varepsilon_1 - \varepsilon_n}, \text{ hence } X_{-\varepsilon_1 - \varepsilon_n} \in \text{Lie } P.$$

Clearly, this last step of the proof would not work under the hypothesis $p = 2$. \square

Proof. (of Theorem 2.2 in type B_n when $P_{\text{red}} = P_n$)

Let G be simple adjoint of type B_n and $X = G/P$ with a faithful G -action such that $P_{\text{red}} = P_n = P^{\alpha_n}$ and P is nonreduced. When $p = 2$, the above Proposition, together with the computation of Example 1.15, imply that

$$\mathfrak{g}_< = \text{Lie } N_G \subset \text{Lie } P,$$

hence we get $N_G \subset P$, which is a contradiction by Remark 2.4. When $p = 3$, the above Proposition implies that $\text{Lie } P = \text{Lie } G$, hence the Frobenius kernel satisfies $G_1 \subset P$, which gives again a contradiction. Therefore in both cases P must be a smooth parabolic. \square

Remark 2.13. A small additional remark is needed in order to have a uniform statement later on, since this is the only case where the group G is not simply connected: let $\psi: \tilde{G} = \text{Spin}_{2n+1} \rightarrow G = \text{SO}_{2n+1}$ be the quotient morphism and consider a nonreduced parabolic subgroup $P \subset \tilde{G}$ such that $P_{\text{red}} = P^{\alpha_n}$. The above reasoning implies that $\psi(P)$ either contains N_G - when such a subgroup is defined - or it contains the Frobenius kernel G_1 . In particular, P contains a normal noncentral subgroup of height one, namely $P \cap \psi^{-1}(N_G)$ or $P \cap \psi^{-1}(G_1)$.

2.4.3. *Reduced parabolic P_m , $m < n$.* Let us consider again a k -vector space V of dimension $2n + 1$ and denote as G the group $\text{SO}_{2n+1} = \text{SO}(V)$, of type B_n with $n \geq 2$ and k of characteristic $p = 2$ or 3 . Moreover, let us consider the maximal reduced parabolic subgroup

$$P_m := P^{\alpha_m}$$

associated to a long simple root α_m for some $m < n$, keeping notations from (2.3). This subgroup is the stabilizer of an isotropic vector subspace $W = ke_0 \oplus \cdots \oplus ke_{m-1} \subset V$ of dimension m , where $(e_i)_{i=0}^{2n}$ denotes the standard basis of k^{2n+1} . Since its Levi subgroup $L_m = P_m \cap P_m^-$ stabilizes both W and its dual $W^* = ke_{2n-m+1} \oplus \cdots \oplus ke_{2n}$, we conclude that it is of the form

$$L_m = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} A & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & B & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & (A^{-1})^\# \end{pmatrix} : A \in \text{GL}(W), B \in \text{SO}(U) \right\} \subset P_m = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} * & * & * \\ 0 & * & * \\ 0 & 0 & * \end{pmatrix} \right\}$$

where $V = W \oplus U \oplus W^*$. In particular, $L_m \simeq \text{GL}_m \times \text{SO}_{2n-2m+1}$ with root system Ψ given by

$$\Psi^+ = \{\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j, i < j \leq m\} \cup \{\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j, \varepsilon_i + \varepsilon_j, m < i < j\} \cup \{\varepsilon_j, m < j\}.$$

Proposition 2.14. *Assume given a nonreduced parabolic subgroup P such that $P_{\text{red}} = P_m$. Then $\text{Lie } P = \text{Lie } G$ or $\text{Lie } P = \text{Lie } P_m + \mathfrak{g}_<$. If $p = 3$, then necessarily $\text{Lie } P = \text{Lie } G$.*

Proof. The Lie algebra of P_m contains all root subspaces except for those associated to negative roots containing α_m in their support, hence

$$V_m := \text{Lie } G / \text{Lie } P_m = \left(\bigoplus_{i < j \leq m} \mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j} \bigoplus_{j \leq m} \mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_j} \right) \bigoplus_{i \leq m < j} (\mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_i + \varepsilon_j})$$

The analogous computations as those in the proofs of Proposition 2.10 and (2.4) imply that, as L_m -modules,

- (1) $\bigoplus_{j \leq m} \mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_j}$ is isomorphic to the dual of the standard representation of GL_n on k^m , hence it is in particular a simple L_m -submodule of V_m ;
- (2) $\bigoplus_{i \leq m < j} (\mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_i - \varepsilon_j} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_i + \varepsilon_j})$ is isomorphic to the following representation, which gives a second irreducible L_m -submodule of V_m :

$$\text{GL}_m \times \text{SO}_{2n-2m+1} \curvearrowright \text{Hom}_k(k^m, k^{2n-2m+1}), \quad (A, B) \cdot Y = BYA^{-1}.$$

Now, first assume $\mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_l} \subset \text{Lie } P$ for some $l \leq m$. Then $\bigoplus_{j \leq m} \mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_j}$ is contained in $\text{Lie } P$, since $\text{Lie } P / \text{Lie } P_m$ is a nontrivial L_m -submodule of V_m . Hence in this case $\mathfrak{g}_< \subset \text{Lie } P$.

The only other possibility is to start by assuming that $\mathfrak{g}_\gamma \subset \text{Lie } P$ for some long negative root γ containing α_m in its support. Then one can repeat the same exact reasoning of point (b) in the proof of Proposition 2.10, since it involves only roots of the form $\pm(\varepsilon_l \pm \varepsilon_m)$ with $l < m$, to conclude that all root subspaces associated to long negative roots are also contained in $\text{Lie } P$. To conclude that, in this case, $\text{Lie } P = \text{Lie } G$, it suffices to apply Lemma 2.5 to $\gamma = -\varepsilon_1 - \varepsilon_m$ and $\delta = \varepsilon_m$, which gives

$$[X_{-\varepsilon_1 - \varepsilon_m}, X_{\varepsilon_m}] = \pm X_{-\varepsilon_1} \in \text{Lie } P$$

as wanted.

Up to this point everything holds in both characteristic $p = 2$ and 3 . To conclude it is enough to show that, when $p = 3$, if $\mathfrak{g}_< \subset \text{Lie } P$ then there is a long negative root ν satisfying $\mathfrak{g}_\nu \subset \text{Lie } P / \text{Lie } P_m$. For this, let us consider roots

$$\gamma = -\varepsilon_1 \text{ and } \delta = -\varepsilon_n, \text{ satisfying } X_\gamma, X_\delta \in \text{Lie } P \text{ by our last assumption.}$$

Thus, $\gamma + \delta = -\varepsilon_1 - \varepsilon_n$ is still a root, $\gamma - \delta = -\varepsilon_1 + \varepsilon_n$ is too, while $\gamma - 2\delta = -\varepsilon_1 + 2\varepsilon_n$ is not: applying Lemma 2.5 gives

$$[X_{-\varepsilon_1}, X_{-\varepsilon_n}] = \pm 2X_{-\varepsilon_1 - \varepsilon_n}, \quad \text{hence } X_{-\varepsilon_1 - \varepsilon_n} \in \text{Lie } P$$

as wanted. □

Proof. (of Theorem 2.2 in type B_n when $P_{\text{red}} = P_m$)

Let G be simple adjoint of type B_n and $X = G/P$ with a faithful G -action such that $P_{\text{red}} = P^{\alpha_m}$ and P is nonreduced. When $p = 2$ the above Proposition, together with Example 1.15, imply that

$$\mathfrak{g}_< = \text{Lie } N_G \subset \text{Lie } P,$$

hence we get $N_G \subset P$, which is a contradiction by Remark 2.4. When $p = 3$, the above Proposition implies that $\text{Lie } P = \text{Lie } G$, hence the Frobenius kernel satisfies $G_1 \subset P$, which gives again a contradiction. Therefore in both cases P must be a smooth parabolic. □

Remark 2.15. As in Remark 2.13 above, we can conclude that if $P \subset \text{Spin}_{2n+1}$ is a nonreduced parabolic subgroup satisfying $P_{\text{red}} = P^{\alpha_m}$, then it contains a normal noncentral subgroup of height one.

2.5. **Type F_4 .** Let us consider a simple group G with root system F_4 over an algebraically closed field k of characteristic $p = 2$ or 3 . Following notations from [Bou68], a basis Δ of its root system Φ is given by

$$\alpha_1 = \varepsilon_2 - \varepsilon_3, \quad \alpha_2 = \varepsilon_3 - \varepsilon_4, \quad \alpha_3 = \varepsilon_4, \quad \alpha_4 = \frac{1}{2}(\varepsilon_1 - \varepsilon_2 - \varepsilon_3 - \varepsilon_4),$$

satisfying the relations

$$\|\alpha_1\|^2 = \|\alpha_2\|^2 = 2, \quad \|\alpha_3\|^2 = \|\alpha_4\|^2 = 1$$

and

$$(2.6) \quad (\alpha_1, \alpha_2) = (\alpha_2, \alpha_3) = -1, \quad (\alpha_1, \alpha_3) = (\alpha_1, \alpha_4) = (\alpha_2, \alpha_4) = 0, \quad (\alpha_3, \alpha_4) = -\frac{1}{2}.$$

Let us denote the associated maximal reduced parabolic subgroups as $P_i := P^{\alpha_i}$, for $i \in \{1, 2, 3, 4\}$. Let us also recall that, when $p = 2$, $N_G \subset G$ is the unique subgroup of height one such that

$$\text{Lie } N_G = \text{Lie } \alpha_3^\vee(\mathbf{G}_m) \oplus \text{Lie } \alpha_4^\vee(\mathbf{G}_m) \oplus \mathfrak{g}_< ,$$

where the short positive roots are

$$\begin{aligned} &\alpha_3, \alpha_4, \alpha_2 + \alpha_3, \alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \alpha_3, \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \\ &\alpha_2 + \alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 3\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \\ &\alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 3\alpha_3 + \alpha_4. \end{aligned}$$

Proposition 2.16. *Assume given a nonreduced parabolic subgroup P such that $P_{\text{red}} = P_i$ for some i . Then $\text{Lie } P = \text{Lie } G$ or $\text{Lie } P = \text{Lie } P_i + \mathfrak{g}_<$. If $p = 3$, then necessarily $\text{Lie } P = \text{Lie } G$.*

Proof. Before starting a case-by-case analysis, let us denote as s_i , for $i = 1, 2, 3, 4$, the reflection associated to the simple root α_i , i.e.

$$(2.7) \quad s_i(\gamma) = \gamma - 2 \frac{(\alpha_i, \gamma)}{(\alpha_i, \alpha_i)} \alpha_i, \quad \text{for all } \gamma \in \Phi.$$

Case $P_{\text{red}} = P_1$.

Let us assume that $P_{\text{red}} = P_1$ and denote as $L_1 := P_1 \cap P_1^-$ the Levi subgroup: its root system is of type C_3 with basis consisting of short roots α_4, α_3 and the long root α_2 . Moreover, L_1 acts on the vector space

$$V_1 := \text{Lie } G / \text{Lie } P_1 = \bigoplus_{\gamma \in \Gamma_1} \mathfrak{g}_{-\gamma},$$

where Γ_1 is the subset of all positive roots satisfying $\alpha_1 \in \text{Supp}(\gamma)$. As usual, let us consider the nonzero vector subspace $W_1 := \text{Lie } P / \text{Lie } P_1$, which is a L_1 -submodule of V_1 : the set of its weights, which we denote Ω_1 , must be stable under the reflections s_2, s_3 and s_4 . Our aim is to show that

$$(2.8) \quad \text{either } \Omega_1 = \Gamma_1 \cap \Phi_< \quad \text{or} \quad \Omega_1 = \Gamma_1 :$$

in other words, either $W_1 = \bigoplus_{\gamma \in \Gamma_1 \cap \Phi_<} \mathfrak{g}_{-\gamma}$ or $W_1 = V_1$.

First, let us show that the Weyl group $W(L_1, T) = \langle s_2, s_3, s_4 \rangle$ acts transitively on

$$\begin{aligned} \Gamma_1 \cap \Phi_< = \{ &\alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \alpha_3, \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \\ &\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 3\alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 3\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4 \} : \end{aligned}$$

this implies that either $\Gamma_1 \cap \Phi_{<} \subset \Omega_1$ or $(\Gamma_1 \cap \Phi_{<}) \cap \Omega_1 = \emptyset$. The following computations follow directly from (2.6) and (2.7) :

$$\begin{aligned} s_4(\alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \alpha_3) &= \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \\ s_3(\alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \alpha_3 + \alpha_4) &= \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \\ s_2(\alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4) &= \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \\ s_3(\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4) &= \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 3\alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \\ s_4(\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 3\alpha_3 + \alpha_4) &= \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 3\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4. \end{aligned}$$

Next, let us show that $W(L_1, T)$ acts transitively on

$$\begin{aligned} (\Gamma_1 \cap \Phi_{>}) \setminus \{\tilde{\alpha}\} &= \{\alpha_1, \alpha_1 + \alpha_2, \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3, \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3, \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \\ &\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 4\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \alpha_1 + 3\alpha_2 + 4\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4\}, \end{aligned}$$

where $\tilde{\alpha} := 2\alpha_1 + 3\alpha_2 + 4\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4$ is the highest root. Let us remark that $\tilde{\alpha}$ is indeed fixed by the Weyl group of L_1 : this is due to the fact that it is the only root whose coefficient of α_1 is 2 instead of 1. Again, the transitivity of the action is proved by direct computation :

$$\begin{aligned} s_2(\alpha_1) &= \alpha_1 + \alpha_2, \\ s_3(\alpha_1 + \alpha_2) &= \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3, \\ s_2(\alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3) &= \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3, \\ s_4(\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3) &= \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \\ s_3(\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4) &= \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 4\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \\ s_1(\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4) &= \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \\ s_2(\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 4\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4) &= \alpha_1 + 3\alpha_2 + 4\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4. \end{aligned}$$

Thus, either $(\Gamma_1 \cap \Phi_{>}) \setminus \{\tilde{\alpha}\} \subset \Omega_1$ or $((\Gamma_1 \cap \Phi_{>}) \setminus \{\tilde{\alpha}\}) \cap \Omega_1 = \emptyset$. Next, we show that $\tilde{\alpha} \in \Omega_1$ if and only if $(\Gamma_1 \cap \Phi_{>}) \setminus \{\tilde{\alpha}\} \subset \Omega_1$.

- Assume that $\mathfrak{g}_{-\tilde{\alpha}} \subset W_1$. Then applying Lemma 2.5 to $\gamma = -\tilde{\alpha}$ and $\delta = \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3$ give

$$[X_{-\tilde{\alpha}}, X_{\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3}] = \pm X_{-\alpha_1 - \alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4} \in \text{Lie } P,$$

since $\gamma + \delta$ is a root while $\gamma - \delta = -3\alpha_1 - 5\alpha_2 - 6\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4$ is not. This implies that the long root $\alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4$ belongs to Ω_1

- Assume that $(\Gamma_1 \cap \Phi_{>}) \setminus \{\tilde{\alpha}\} \subset \Omega_1$. In particular,

$$\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1 - \alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4} \subset \text{Lie } P.$$

Thus, we can apply Lemma 2.5 to $\gamma = -\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3$ and $\delta = -\alpha_1 - \alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4$ to get

$$[X_{-\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3}, X_{-\alpha_1 - \alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4}] = \pm X_{-\tilde{\alpha}} \in \text{Lie } P,$$

since $\gamma + \delta$ is a root while $\gamma - \delta = -\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_4$ is not.

The last step in order to prove (2.8) consists in showing that $(\Gamma_1 \cap \Phi_{>}) \subset \Omega_1$ implies $(\Gamma_1 \cap \Phi_{<}) \cap \Omega_1 \neq \emptyset$ which, by the above reasoning, means $\Gamma_1 = \Omega_1$. By our assumption, the long root $\gamma = -\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4$ satisfies $\mathfrak{g}_\gamma \subset \text{Lie } P$. Setting $\delta = -\alpha_3$ and applying Lemma 2.5 gives

$$[X_{-\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4}, X_{-\alpha_3}] = \pm X_{-\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 - 3\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4} \in \text{Lie } P,$$

since $\gamma + \delta$ is a root while $\gamma - \delta = -\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 - \alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4$ is not. This concludes the first case.

Case $P_{\text{red}} = P_2$.

Let us assume that $P_{\text{red}} = P_2$ and fix the analogous notation as above: $L_2 := P_2 \cap P_2^-$ acts on

$$W_2 := \text{Lie } P / \text{Lie } P_2 = \bigoplus_{\gamma \in \Omega_2} \mathfrak{g}_{-\gamma} \subset V_2 := \text{Lie } G / \text{Lie } P_2 = \bigoplus_{\gamma \in \Gamma_2} \mathfrak{g}_{-\gamma}$$

and its set of weights Ω_2 must be stable under the action of the Weyl group $W(L_2, T) = \langle s_1, s_3, s_4 \rangle$. Our aim is to show that

$$(2.9) \quad \text{either } \Omega_2 = \Gamma_2 \cap \Phi_{<} \quad \text{or} \quad \Omega_2 = \Gamma_2.$$

First, let us consider the partition of Γ_2 as disjoint union of the following subsets :

$$\Sigma_1 := \{\alpha_1 + 3\alpha_2 + 4\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \tilde{\alpha}\},$$

$$\Sigma_2 := \{\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3, \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 4\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4\},$$

$$\Sigma_3 := \{\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 3\alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 3\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4\},$$

$$\Sigma_4 := \{\alpha_2 + \alpha_3, \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \alpha_3, \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \\ \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \alpha_2 + \alpha_3 + \alpha_4\},$$

$$\Sigma_5 := \{\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3, \alpha_1 + \alpha_2, \alpha_2, \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3, \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4\}.$$

Notice that $\Sigma_1 \cup \Sigma_2 \cup \Sigma_5 = \Gamma_2 \cap \Phi_{>}$ and $\Sigma_3 \cup \Sigma_4 = \Gamma_2 \cap \Phi_{<}$, so the root lengths once again come into play. Moreover, Σ_1 , $\Sigma_2 \cup \Sigma_3$ and $\Sigma_4 \cup \Sigma_5$ are indeed stable under the action of $W(L_2, T)$, since their elements have coefficient 3, 2 and 1 respectively with respect to the simple root α_2 . Now, the following computations prove that :

- Σ_1 is stable by $W(L_2, T)$:

$$s_1(\alpha_1 + 3\alpha_2 + 4\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4) = \tilde{\alpha};$$

- Σ_2 is stable by $W(L_2, T)$:

$$s_4(\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3) = \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4,$$

$$s_3(\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4) = \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 4\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4;$$

- Σ_3 is stable by $W(L_2, T)$:

$$s_3(\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4) = \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 3\alpha_3 + \alpha_4,$$

$$s_4(\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 3\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4) = \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 3\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4;$$

- Σ_4 is stable by $W(L_2, T)$:

$$s_1(\alpha_2 + \alpha_3) = \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \alpha_3,$$

$$s_4(\alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \alpha_3) = \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \alpha_3 + \alpha_4,$$

$$s_1(\alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \alpha_3 + \alpha_4) = \alpha_2 + \alpha_3 + \alpha_4,$$

$$s_3(\alpha_2 + \alpha_3 + \alpha_4) = \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4,$$

$$s_1(\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4) = \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4;$$

- Σ_5 is stable by $W(L_2, T)$:

$$s_4(\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4) = \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3,$$

$$s_3(\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3) = \alpha_1 + \alpha_2,$$

$$s_1(\alpha_1 + \alpha_2) = \alpha_2 \quad \text{and} \quad s_3(\alpha_1 + \alpha_2) = \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3,$$

$$s_4(\alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3) = \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4.$$

Thus, for $j = 1, \dots, 5$, we have shown that $\Sigma_j \cap \Omega_2 \neq \emptyset$ implies that $\Sigma_j \subset \Omega_2$. Next, we prove the following claims by using Lemma 2.5 on structure constants :

- (a) $\Sigma_1 \subset \Omega_2$ implies that $\Sigma_2 \subset \Omega_2$,
- (b) $\Sigma_2 \subset \Omega_2$ implies that $\Sigma_5 \subset \Omega_2$,
- (c) $\Sigma_5 \subset \Omega_2$ implies that $\Sigma_2 \subset \Omega_2$,
- (d) $\Sigma_2 \cup \Sigma_5 \subset \Omega_2$ implies that $\Sigma_1 \subset \Omega_2$,
- (e) $\Sigma_3 \subset \Omega_2$ implies that $\Sigma_4 \subset \Omega_2$,
- (f) $\Sigma_4 \subset \Omega_2$ implies that $\Sigma_3 \subset \Omega_2$,
- (g) $\Sigma_2 \subset \Omega_2$ implies that $\Sigma_3 \subset \Omega_2$.

The parabolic subgroup P being non-reduced by assumption, the set Ω_2 is nonempty hence, once these implications are proved, it must be either all of Γ_2 or $\Sigma_3 \cup \Sigma_4 = \Gamma_2 \cap \Phi_<$, which proves (2.9).

(a): By assumption $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1-3\alpha_2-4\alpha_3-2\alpha_4} \subset \text{Lie } P$. Set $\gamma = -\alpha_1 - 3\alpha_2 - 4\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4$ and $\delta = \alpha_2$, then $\gamma - \delta = -\alpha_1 - 4\alpha_2 - 4\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4$ is not a root hence

$$[X_\gamma, X_\delta] = \pm X_{-\alpha_1-2\alpha_2-4\alpha_3-2\alpha_4} \in \text{Lie } P$$

so $\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 4\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4 \in \Sigma_2 \cap \Omega_2$.

(b): By assumption $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1-2\alpha_2-4\alpha_3-2\alpha_4} \subset \text{Lie } P$. Set $\gamma = -\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 - 4\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4$ and $\delta = \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3$, then $\gamma - \delta = -\alpha_1 - 3\alpha_2 - 6\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4$ is not a root hence

$$[X_\gamma, X_\delta] = \pm X_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2-2\alpha_3-2\alpha_4} \in \text{Lie } P$$

so $\alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4 \in \Sigma_5 \cap \Omega_2$.

(c): By assumption $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_2-2\alpha_3} \subset \text{Lie } P$. Set $\gamma = -\alpha_1 - \alpha_2$ and $\delta = -\alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3$, then $\gamma - \delta = -\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_3$ is not a root hence

$$[X_\gamma, X_\delta] = \pm X_{-\alpha_1-2\alpha_2-2\alpha_3} \in \text{Lie } P$$

so $\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 \in \Sigma_2 \cap \Omega_2$.

(d): By assumption $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2-2\alpha_3-2\alpha_4} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1-2\alpha_2-2\alpha_3} \subset \text{Lie } P$. Set $\gamma = -\alpha_1 - \alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4$ and $\delta = -\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3$, then $\gamma - \delta = \alpha_2 - 2\alpha_4$ is not a root hence

$$[X_\gamma, X_\delta] = \pm X_{-\tilde{\alpha}} \in \text{Lie } P$$

so $\tilde{\alpha} \in \Sigma_1 \cap \Omega_2$.

(e): By assumption $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1-2\alpha_2-2\alpha_3-\alpha_4} \subset \text{Lie } P$. Set $\gamma = -\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3 - \alpha_4$ and $\delta = \alpha_2$, then $\gamma - \delta = -\alpha_1 - 3\alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3 - \alpha_4$ is not a root hence

$$[X_\gamma, X_\delta] = \pm X_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2-2\alpha_3-\alpha_4} \in \text{Lie } P$$

so $\alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4 \in \Sigma_4 \cap \Omega_2$.

(f): By assumption $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2-\alpha_3-\alpha_4} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_2-2\alpha_3-\alpha_4} \subset \text{Lie } P$. Set $\gamma = -\alpha_1 - \alpha_2 - \alpha_3 - \alpha_4$ and $\delta = -\alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3 - \alpha_4$, then $\gamma - \delta = -\alpha_1 + \alpha_3$ is not a root hence

$$[X_\gamma, X_\delta] = \pm X_{-\alpha_1-2\alpha_2-3\alpha_3-2\alpha_4} \in \text{Lie } P$$

so $\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 3\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4 \in \Sigma_3 \cap \Omega_2$.

(g): By assumption $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1-2\alpha_2-2\alpha_3-2\alpha_4} \subset \text{Lie } P$. Set $\gamma = -\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4$ and $\delta = -\alpha_3$, then $\gamma - \delta = -\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 - \alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4$ is not a root hence

$$[X_\gamma, X_\delta] = \pm X_{-\alpha_1-2\alpha_2-3\alpha_3-2\alpha_4} \in \text{Lie } P$$

so $\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 3\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4 \in \Sigma_3 \cap \Omega_2$.

Case $P_{\text{red}} = P_3$.

Let us assume that $P_{\text{red}} = P_3$ and fix the analogous notation as above: $L_3 := P_3 \cap P_3^-$ acts on

$$W_3 := \text{Lie } P / \text{Lie } P_3 = \bigoplus_{\gamma \in \Omega_3} \mathfrak{g}_{-\gamma} \subset V_3 := \text{Lie } G / \text{Lie } P_3 = \bigoplus_{\gamma \in \Gamma_3} \mathfrak{g}_{-\gamma}$$

and its set of weights Ω_3 must be stable under the action of the Weyl group $W(L_3, T) = \langle s_1, s_2, s_4 \rangle$. Our aim is to show that

$$(2.10) \quad \text{either } \Omega_3 = \Gamma_3 \cap \Phi_{<} \quad \text{or} \quad \Omega_3 = \Gamma_3.$$

First, let us consider the partition of Γ_3 as disjoint union of the following subsets :

$$\Lambda_1 := \{\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 4\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \alpha_1 + 3\alpha_2 + 4\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \tilde{\alpha}\},$$

$$\Lambda_2 := \{\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3, \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3, \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3\},$$

$$\Lambda_3 := \{\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 3\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 3\alpha_3 + \alpha_4\},$$

$$\Lambda_4 := \{\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4\},$$

$$\Lambda_5 := \{\alpha_2 + \alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \alpha_3, \alpha_2 + \alpha_3, \alpha_3, \alpha_3 + \alpha_4\}.$$

Notice that $\Lambda_1 \cup \Lambda_2 = \Gamma_3 \cap \Phi_{>}$ and $\Lambda_3 \cup \Lambda_4 \cup \Lambda_5 = \Gamma_3 \cap \Phi_{<}$; moreover, as in the preceding case, let us remark that $\Lambda_1, \Lambda_3, \Lambda_2 \cup \Lambda_4$ and Λ_5 are stable under $W(L_3, T)$ because their elements have as coefficient respectively 4, 3, 2 and 1 with respect to the simple root α_3 . Now let us prove by direct computation that :

- Λ_1 is stable by $W(L_3, T)$:

$$\begin{aligned} s_2(\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 4\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4) &= \alpha_1 + 3\alpha_2 + 4\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \\ s_1(\alpha_1 + 3\alpha_2 + 4\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4) &= \tilde{\alpha}; \end{aligned}$$

- Λ_2 is stable by $W(L_3, T)$:

$$\begin{aligned} s_4(\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3) &= \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \\ s_2(\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4) &= \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \\ s_1(\alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4) &= \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \\ s_4(\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4) &= \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3, \\ s_1(\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3) &= \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3; \end{aligned}$$

- Λ_3 is stable by $W(L_3, T)$:

$$s_4(\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 3\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4) = \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 3\alpha_3 + \alpha_4;$$

- Λ_4 is stable by $W(L_3, T)$:

$$\begin{aligned} s_2(\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4) &= \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \\ s_1(\alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4) &= \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4; \end{aligned}$$

- Λ_5 is stable by $W(L_3, T)$:

$$\begin{aligned} s_1(\alpha_2 + \alpha_3 + \alpha_4) &= \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \\ s_4(\alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \alpha_3 + \alpha_4) &= \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \alpha_3, \\ s_1(\alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \alpha_3) &= \alpha_2 + \alpha_3, \\ s_2(\alpha_2 + \alpha_3) &= \alpha_3, \\ s_4(\alpha_3) &= \alpha_3 + \alpha_4. \end{aligned}$$

Thus, for $j = 1, \dots, 5$, we have shown that $\Lambda_j \cap \Omega_3 \neq \emptyset$ implies that $\Lambda_j \subset \Omega_3$. Next, we need to prove the following claims by using Lemma 2.5 on structure constants :

- $\Lambda_1 \subset \Omega_3$ implies that $\Lambda_2 \subset \Omega_3$,
- $\Lambda_2 \subset \Omega_3$ implies that $\Lambda_1 \subset \Omega_3$,
- $\Lambda_3 \subset \Omega_3$ implies that $\Lambda_4 \subset \Omega_3$,

- (d) $\Lambda_4 \subset \Omega_3$ implies that $\Lambda_5 \subset \Omega_3$,
- (e) $\Lambda_5 \subset \Omega_3$ implies that $\Lambda_4 \subset \Omega_3$,
- (f) $\Lambda_4 \cup \Lambda_5 \subset \Omega_3$ implies that $\Lambda_3 \subset \Omega_3$,
- (g) $\Lambda_1 \subset \Omega_3$ implies that $\Lambda_3 \subset \Omega_3$.

The parabolic subgroup P being non-reduced by assumption, the set Ω_3 is nonempty hence, once these implications are proved, it must be either all of Γ_3 or $\Lambda_3 \cup \Lambda_4 \cup \Lambda_5 = \Gamma_3 \cap \Phi_{<}$, which proves (2.10).

(a): By assumption $\mathfrak{g}_{-\tilde{\alpha}} \subset \text{Lie } P$. Set $\gamma = -\tilde{\alpha}$ and $\delta = \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3$, then $\gamma - \delta = -3\alpha_1 + 5\alpha_2 + 6\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4$ is not a root hence

$$[X_\gamma, X_\delta] = \pm X_{-\alpha_1 - \alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4} \in \text{Lie } P$$

so $\alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4 \in \Lambda_2 \cap \Omega_3$.

(b): By assumption $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1 - \alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4} \subset \text{Lie } P$. Set $\gamma = -\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3$ and $\delta = -\alpha_1 - \alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4$, then $\gamma - \delta = -\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_4$ is not a root hence

$$[X_\gamma, X_\delta] = \pm X_{-\tilde{\alpha}} \in \text{Lie } P$$

so $\tilde{\alpha} \in \Lambda_1 \cap \Omega_3$.

(c): By assumption $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 - 3\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4} \subset \text{Lie } P$. Set $\gamma = -\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 - 3\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4$ and $\delta = \alpha_3 + \alpha_4 \in \Phi^+$, then $\gamma - \delta = -\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 - 4\alpha_3 - 3\alpha_4$ is not a root hence

$$[X_\gamma, X_\delta] = \pm X_{-\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3 - \alpha_4} \in \text{Lie } P$$

so $\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4 \in \Lambda_4 \cap \Omega_3$.

(d): By assumption $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3 - \alpha_4} \subset \text{Lie } P$. Set $\gamma = -\alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3 - \alpha_4$ and $\delta = \alpha_3 \in \Phi^+$, then $\gamma - \delta = -\alpha_2 - 3\alpha_3 - \alpha_4$ is not a root hence

$$[X_\gamma, X_\delta] = \pm X_{-\alpha_2 - \alpha_3 - \alpha_4} \in \text{Lie } P$$

so $\alpha_2 + \alpha_3 + \alpha_4 \in \Lambda_5 \cap \Omega_3$.

(e): By assumption $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_3 - \alpha_4} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_2 - \alpha_3} \subset \text{Lie } P$. Set $\gamma = -\alpha_3 - \alpha_4$ and $\delta = -\alpha_2 - \alpha_3$, then $\gamma - \delta = -\alpha_2 + \alpha_4$ is not a root hence

$$[X_\gamma, X_\delta] = \pm X_{-\alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3 - \alpha_4} \in \text{Lie } P$$

so $\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4 \in \Lambda_4 \cap \Omega_3$.

(f): By assumption $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1 - \alpha_2 - \alpha_3 - \alpha_4} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3 - \alpha_4} \subset \text{Lie } P$. Set $\gamma = -\alpha_1 - \alpha_2 - \alpha_3 - \alpha_4$ and $\delta = -\alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3 - \alpha_4$, then $\gamma - \delta = -\alpha_1 - \alpha_3$ is not a root hence

$$[X_\gamma, X_\delta] = \pm X_{-\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 - 3\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4} \in \text{Lie } P$$

so $\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 3\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4 \in \Lambda_3 \cap \Omega_3$.

(g): By assumption $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 - 4\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4} \subset \text{Lie } P$. Set $\gamma = -\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 - 4\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4$ and $\delta = \alpha_3 \in \Phi^+$, then $\gamma - \delta = -\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 - 5\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4$ is not a root hence

$$[X_\gamma, X_\delta] = \pm X_{-\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 - 3\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4} \in \text{Lie } P$$

so $\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 + 3\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4 \in \Lambda_3 \cap \Omega_3$.

Case $P_{\text{red}} = P_4$.

Let us assume that $P_{\text{red}} = P_4$ and fix the analogous notation as above: the Levi subgroup $L_4 := P_4 \cap P_4^-$, which is of type B_3 , acts on

$$W_4 := \text{Lie } P / \text{Lie } P_4 = \bigoplus_{\gamma \in \Omega_4} \mathfrak{g}_{-\gamma} \subset V_4 := \text{Lie } G / \text{Lie } P_4 = \bigoplus_{\gamma \in \Gamma_4} \mathfrak{g}_{-\gamma}$$

and its set of weights Ω_4 must be stable under the action of the Weyl group $W(L_4, T) = \langle s_1, s_2, s_3 \rangle$. Our aim is to show that

$$(2.11) \quad \text{either } \Omega_4 = \Gamma_4 \cap \Phi_{<} \quad \text{or} \quad \Omega_4 = \Gamma_4.$$

Let $\beta := \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 3\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4$ and consider, as in the first case of this proof, the action of $W(L_4, T)$ on

$$(\Gamma_4 \cap \Phi_{<}) \setminus \{\beta, \alpha_4\} := \{\alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \alpha_2 + \alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \\ \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 3\alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4\},$$

which is transitive because

$$\begin{aligned} s_2(\alpha_3 + \alpha_4) &= \alpha_2 + \alpha_3 + \alpha_4 \\ s_1(\alpha_2 + \alpha_3 + \alpha_4) &= \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \\ s_3(\alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \alpha_3 + \alpha_4) &= \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \\ s_2(\alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4) &= \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \\ s_1(\alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4) &= \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \\ s_3(\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4) &= \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 3\alpha_3 + \alpha_4, \end{aligned}$$

and the same action on

$$\Gamma_4 \cap \Phi_{>} = \{\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \\ \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 4\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \alpha_1 + 3\alpha_2 + 4\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \tilde{\alpha}\},$$

which is also transitive because

$$\begin{aligned} s_1(\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4) &= \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \\ s_2(\alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4) &= \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \\ s_3(\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4) &= \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 4\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \\ s_2(\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 4\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4) &= \alpha_1 + 3\alpha_2 + 4\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4, \\ s_1(\alpha_1 + 3\alpha_2 + 4\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4) &= \tilde{\alpha}. \end{aligned}$$

Next, we prove the following claims using Lemma 2.5 on structure constants :

- (a) $\Gamma_4 \cap \Phi_{>} \subset \Omega_4$ implies that $\beta \in \Omega_4$,
- (b) $\beta \in \Omega_4$ implies that $(\Gamma_4 \cap \Phi_{<}) \setminus \{\beta, \alpha_4\} \subset \Omega_4$,
- (c) $(\Gamma_4 \cap \Phi_{<}) \setminus \{\beta, \alpha_4\} \subset \Omega_4$ implies that $\alpha_4 \in \Omega_4$,
- (d) $\alpha_4 \in \Omega_4$ implies that $(\Gamma_4 \cap \Phi_{<}) \setminus \{\beta, \alpha_4\} \subset \Omega_4$,
- (e) $(\Gamma_4 \cap \Phi_{<}) \setminus \{\beta\} \subset \Omega_4$ implies that $\beta \in \Omega_4$.

The parabolic subgroup P being non-reduced by assumption, the set Ω_4 is nonempty hence, once these implications are proved, it must be either all of Γ_4 or $\Gamma_4 \cap \Phi_{<}$, which proves (2.11).

(a): By assumption $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_2-2\alpha_3-2\alpha_4} \subset \text{Lie } P$ and $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2-\alpha_3} \in \text{Lie } L_4 \subset \text{Lie } P$. Set $\gamma = -\alpha_2 - 2\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4$ and $\delta = -\alpha_1 - \alpha_2 - \alpha_3$, then $\gamma - \delta = \alpha_1 - \alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4$ is not a root hence

$$[X_\gamma, X_\delta] = \pm X_{-\beta} \in \text{Lie } P$$

so $\beta \in \Omega_4$.

(b): By assumption $\mathfrak{g}_{-\beta} \subset \text{Lie } P$. Set $\gamma = -\beta$ and $\delta = \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \alpha_3 + \alpha_4 \in \Phi^+$, then $\gamma - \delta = -2\alpha_1 - 3\alpha_2 - 4\alpha_3 - 3\alpha_4$ is not a root hence

$$[X_\gamma, X_\delta] = \pm X_{-\alpha_2-2\alpha_3-\alpha_4} \in \text{Lie } P$$

so $\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + \alpha_4 \in ((\Gamma_4 \cap \Phi_{<}) \setminus \{\beta, \alpha_4\}) \cap \Omega_4$.

(c): By assumption $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_3-\alpha_4} \subset \text{Lie } P$. Set $\gamma = -\alpha_3 - \alpha_4$ and $\delta = \alpha_3 \in \Phi^+$, then $\gamma - \delta = -2\alpha_3 - \alpha_4$ is not a root hence

$$[X_\gamma, X_\delta] = \pm X_{-\alpha_4} \in \text{Lie } P$$

so $\alpha_4 \in \Omega_4$.

(d): By assumption $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_4} \subset \text{Lie } P$ and $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_3} \subset \text{Lie } L_4 \subset \text{Lie } P$. Set $\gamma = -\alpha_4$ and $\delta = -\alpha_3$, then $\gamma - \delta = \alpha_3 - \alpha_4$ is not a root hence

$$[X_\gamma, X_\delta] = \pm X_{-\alpha_3-\alpha_4} \in \text{Lie } P$$

so $\alpha_3 + \alpha_4 \in ((\Gamma_4 \cap \Phi_{<}) \setminus \{\beta, \alpha_4\}) \cap \Omega_4$.

(e): By assumption $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_4} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1-2\alpha_2-3\alpha_3-\alpha_4} \subset \text{Lie } P$. Set $\gamma = -\alpha_4$ and $\delta = -\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 - 3\alpha_3 - \alpha_4$, then $\gamma - \delta = \alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 3\alpha_3$ is not a root hence

$$[X_\gamma, X_\delta] = \pm X_{-\beta} \in \text{Lie } P$$

so $\beta \in \Omega_4$.

Conclusion: up to this point all computations hold in both characteristic $p = 2$ and 3 . To conclude our proof when $p = 3$, one more step - which works simultaneously for all cases $i = 1, 2, 3, 4$ - is necessary in order to conclude that $\Omega_i = \Gamma_i$. That is, we want to show that $(\Gamma_i \cap \Phi_{<}) \subset \Omega_i$ implies $(\Gamma_i \cap \Phi_{>}) \cap \Omega_i \neq \emptyset$. By assumption, $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1-2\alpha_2-3\alpha_3-2\alpha_4} \subset \text{Lie } P$. Set $\gamma = -\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 - 3\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4$ and $\delta = \alpha_3 \in \Phi^+$, then $\gamma + \delta$ and $\gamma - \delta$ are still roots while $\gamma - 2\delta = -\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 - 5\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4$ is not, hence

$$[X_\gamma, X_\delta] = \pm 2X_{-\alpha_1-2\alpha_2-4\alpha_3-2\alpha_4} \in \text{Lie } P \quad \text{hence } X_{-\alpha_1-2\alpha_2-4\alpha_3-2\alpha_4} \in \text{Lie } P,$$

so that $-\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2 - 4\alpha_3 - 2\alpha_4 \in (\Gamma_i \cap \Phi_{>}) \cap \Omega_i$ as wanted. \square

Proof. (of Theorem 2.2 in type F_4)

Let G be simple of type F_4 and $X = G/P$ with a faithful G -action such that P_{red} is maximal and P is nonreduced. When $p = 2$, Proposition 2.16 implies that $\mathfrak{g}_{<} \subset \text{Lie } P$, hence we get $\text{Lie } N_G \subset \text{Lie } P$ and $N_G \subset P$ by the equivalence of categories, which is a contradiction by Remark 2.4. When $p = 3$, the above Proposition implies that $\text{Lie } P = \text{Lie } G$, hence the Frobenius kernel satisfies $G_1 \subset P$, which gives again a contradiction. Therefore in both cases P must be a reduced parabolic. \square

2.6. Type G_2 . The last non-simply laced Dynkin diagram we have to consider is of type G_2 . In this case, things behave as expected when the reduced parabolic subgroup is P^{α_2} , the one associated with the long simple root α_2 , or when the characteristic is $p = 3$: the proof follows the same strategy as in types B_n, C_n and F_4 .

This still leaves out the case of a nonreduced parabolic subgroup satisfying $P_{\text{red}} = P^{\alpha_1}$ in characteristic 2, where α_1 denotes the short simple root. Under such assumptions, we find two maximal p -Lie subalgebras

$$\mathfrak{h} := \text{Lie } P^{\alpha_1} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \quad \text{and} \quad \mathfrak{l} := \text{Lie } P^{\alpha_1} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2},$$

containing $\text{Lie } P^{\alpha_1}$. Let H and L be of height one with Lie algebra respectively equal to $\mathfrak{g}_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}$ and $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2}$, and define

$$P_{\mathfrak{h}} := \langle H, P^{\alpha_1} \rangle \quad \text{and} \quad P_{\mathfrak{l}} := \langle L, P^{\alpha_1} \rangle.$$

This gives rise to two parabolic subgroups which have as reduced subgroup a maximal one, but cannot be described as $(\ker \varphi)P^{\alpha_1}$ for some isogeny φ with source G . We then move on to investigate the corresponding homogeneous spaces, which we describe by using the Chevalley description of G as automorphism group of an octonion algebra.

The main result is the following, which completes the classification of Theorem 1.

Theorem 2.17. *Let G be of type G_2 in characteristic two and let P be a nonreduced parabolic subgroup of G having P^{α_1} as reduced part.*

Then one of the three following cases holds:

- P is of standard type and $X \simeq G/P^{\alpha_1}$ is isomorphic to a quadric Q in \mathbf{P}^6 ;
- P is obtained from $P_{\mathfrak{h}}$ by pull back via an iterated Frobenius morphism and $X \simeq G/P_{\mathfrak{h}}$ is isomorphic to \mathbf{P}^5 ;
- P is obtained from $P_{\mathfrak{l}}$ by pull back via an iterated Frobenius morphism and $X \simeq G/P_{\mathfrak{l}}$ is isomorphic to a hyperplane section of $\mathrm{Sp}_6/P^{\alpha_3}$.

Let us recall for reference the following result: see [Dem77, Theorem 1], reformulated here under the stronger hypothesis of k being an algebraically closed field. It will be needed to conclude the type G_2 case, as well as later on, when dealing with higher Picard ranks.

Theorem 2.18. *Let H' be a semisimple adjoint group over k and Q' a reduced parabolic subgroup of H' . Then the natural homomorphism*

$$H' \longrightarrow H := \underline{\mathrm{Aut}}_{H'/Q'}^0$$

is an isomorphism in all but the three following cases:

- (a) H' is of type C_n for some $n \geq 2$ and $Q' = P^{\alpha_1}$ is associated to the first short simple root: in this case the automorphism group H is smooth simple adjoint of type A_{2n-1} ;
- (b) H' is of type B_n for some $n \geq 2$ and $Q' = P^{\alpha_n}$ is associated to the short simple root: in this case the automorphism group H is smooth simple adjoint of type D_{n+1} ;
- (c) H' is of type G_2 and $Q' = P^{\alpha_1}$: in this case the automorphism group H is smooth simple adjoint of type B_3 .

With a slight change of notation compared to Demazure, we call the three pairs (H, Q) in the cases (a), (b) and (c) of the Theorem *exceptional*, while (H', Q') is called the *associated* pair to the exceptional one.

Remark 2.19. In order to be clear let us recall what we mean by automorphism group, both in Theorem 2.18 and in the rest of the paper. For a proper algebraic scheme X over a perfect field k , let us consider the functor

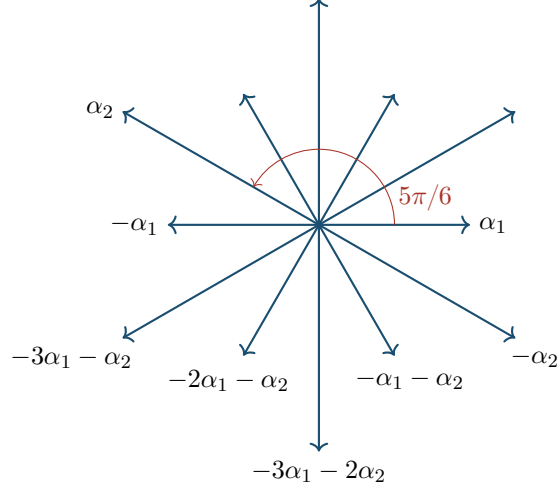
$$\underline{\mathrm{Aut}}_X: (\mathbf{Sch}/k)_{\mathrm{red}} \longrightarrow \mathbf{Grp}, \quad T \longmapsto \mathrm{Aut}_T(X_T),$$

sending a reduced k -scheme T to the group of automorphisms of T -schemes of $X \times_k T$. By [MO67, Theorem 3.6] this functor is represented by a reduced group scheme $\underline{\mathrm{Aut}}_X$ which is locally of finite type over k . We denote as $\underline{\mathrm{Aut}}_X^0$ its connected component of the identity, which is a smooth algebraic group.

2.6.1. *What works as expected.* Let us consider a group G with root system of type G_2 over a field k of characteristic $p = 2$ or 3 . Following notations from [Bou68], the elements of Φ^+ are

$$\alpha_1, \quad \alpha_1 + \alpha_2, \quad 2\alpha_1 + \alpha_2, \quad 3\alpha_1 + \alpha_2, \quad \alpha_2, \quad 3\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2.$$

In particular, let us consider as elements of the basis Δ the short root α_1 and the long root α_2 ; then denote $P_1 := P^{\alpha_1}$ and $P_2 := P^{\alpha_2}$ the associated maximal reduced parabolic subgroups.



Let us recall that, when $p = 3$, $N_G \subset G$ is in this case the unique subgroup of height one such that

$$\text{Lie } N_G = \text{Lie } \alpha_1^\vee(\mathbf{G}_m) \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{\alpha_1} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{\alpha_2+2\alpha_1} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_2-2\alpha_1} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{\alpha_1+\alpha_2} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2}.$$

Proposition 2.20. *Assume given a nonreduced parabolic P such that $P_{\text{red}} = P_1$ (with $p = 3$) or $P_{\text{red}} = P_2$ (with $p = 2$ or 3). Then $\text{Lie } P = \text{Lie } G$ or $\text{Lie } P = \text{Lie } P_{\text{red}} + \mathfrak{g}_<$. If $p = 2$, then necessarily $\text{Lie } P = \text{Lie } G$.*

Remark 2.21. We can conclude that Theorem 2.2 holds in this case as follows: let G be simple of type G_2 and $X = G/P$ with a faithful G -action such that P_{red} is maximal, satisfies the hypothesis of Proposition 2.20, and such that P is nonreduced. The above Proposition implies that

$$\text{Lie } \alpha_1^\vee(\mathbf{G}_m) \oplus \mathfrak{g}_< = \text{Lie } N_G \subset \text{Lie } P,$$

hence we get $N_G \subset P$, which is a contradiction by Remark 2.4. Therefore P must be a smooth parabolic.

Proof. Case $P_{\text{red}} = P_1$.

Let us assume that $P_{\text{red}} = P_1$ and that the characteristic is $p = 3$. The Levi subgroup $L_1 := P_1 \cap P_1^-$ has root system $\{\pm\alpha_2\}$ and acts on the vector space

$$V_1 := \text{Lie } G / \text{Lie } P_1 = \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-3\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-3\alpha_1-2\alpha_2}.$$

Now, let us look at the nonzero vector subspace $W_1 := \text{Lie } P / \text{Lie } P_1$, which is in particular an L_1 -submodule of V_1 . Thus, the set of its weights must be stable under the reflection s_{α_2} . This means, by a direct computation, that

$$(2.12) \quad \mathfrak{g}_{-3\alpha_1-2\alpha_2} \subset W_1 \iff \mathfrak{g}_{-3\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \subset W_1,$$

$$(2.13) \quad \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \subset W_1 \iff \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1} \subset W_1.$$

Let us assume first that $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1} \subset W_1$. Then, applying Lemma 2.5 to $\gamma = -\alpha_1 - \alpha_2$ and $\delta = -\alpha_1$ gives

$$[X_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2}, X_{-\alpha_1}] = \pm 2X_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}, \quad \text{hence } X_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \in \text{Lie } P,$$

since $\gamma + \delta$ and $\gamma - \delta$ are roots while $\gamma - 2\delta = \alpha_1 - \alpha_2$ is not. Conversely, assuming $\mathfrak{g}_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \subset W_1$ and considering roots $\gamma = -2\alpha_1 - \alpha_2$ and $\delta = \alpha_1$ yields

$$[X_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}, X_{\alpha_1}] = \pm 2X_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2}, \quad \text{hence } X_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \in \text{Lie } P.$$

In other words, we have showed that whenever a root subspace associated to a short negative root is contained in W_1 , the other two are too.

To conclude this first case, it is enough to show that

$$\mathfrak{g}_{-3\alpha_1-2\alpha_2} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-3\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \subset W_1 \quad \text{implies that} \quad \mathfrak{g}_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \subset W_1.$$

This can be done by considering roots $\gamma = -3\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2$ and $\delta = \alpha_1 + \alpha_2$, for which $\gamma + \delta$ is a root but $\gamma - \delta = -4\alpha_1 - 3\alpha_2$ is not, hence

$$[X_{-3\alpha_1-2\alpha_2}, X_{\alpha_1+\alpha_2}] = \pm X_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \in \text{Lie } P.$$

Case $P_{\text{red}} = P_2$.

Moving on to the second case, let us assume that $P_{\text{red}} = P_2$. The Levi subgroup $L_2 := P_2 \cap P_2^-$ has root system $\{\pm\alpha_1\}$ and acts on the vector space

$$V_2 := \text{Lie } G / \text{Lie } P_1 = \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_2} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-3\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-3\alpha_1-2\alpha_2}.$$

Now, let us look at the nonzero vector subspace $W_2 := \text{Lie } P / \text{Lie } P_2$, which is in particular an L_2 -submodule of V_2 . Thus, the set of its weights must be stable under the reflection s_{α_1} . This means, by a direct computation, that

$$(2.14) \quad \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \subset W_2 \iff \mathfrak{g}_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \subset W_2,$$

$$(2.15) \quad \mathfrak{g}_{-3\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \subset W_2 \iff \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1} \subset W_2.$$

The equivalence (2.14) already implies that once a root subspace associated to a short negative root is contained in W_2 , the only other one is too.

If $p = 3$, to conclude it suffices to show that $\mathfrak{g}_{-\gamma} \subset W_2$ for some long root $\gamma \in \Phi^+$ implies $W_2 = V_2$ i.e. $\text{Lie } P = \text{Lie } G$. First,

$$[X_{-3\alpha_1-2\alpha_2}, X_{\alpha_2}] = \pm X_{-3\alpha_1-\alpha_2},$$

because $(-3\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2) - \alpha_2$ is not a root, and conversely

$$[X_{-3\alpha_1-\alpha_2}, X_{-\alpha_2}] = \pm X_{-3\alpha_1-2\alpha_2},$$

because $(-3\alpha_1 - \alpha_2) - (-\alpha_2)$ is not a root. Finally,

$$[X_{-3\alpha_1-\alpha_2}, X_{\alpha_1}] = \pm X_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2},$$

because $(-3\alpha_1 - \alpha_2) - \alpha_1$ is not a root. This proves that in this case $W_2 = V_2$.

If $p = 2$, one more step must be added: assume that $\mathfrak{g}_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \subset W_2$, then

$$[X_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}, X_{-\alpha_1}] = \pm X_{-3\alpha_1-\alpha_2}, \quad \text{hence } X_{-3\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \in \text{Lie } P,$$

because $(-2\alpha_1 - \alpha_2) + \alpha_1$, $(-2\alpha_1 - \alpha_2) + 2\alpha_1$ are roots, while $(-2\alpha_1 - \alpha_2) + 3\alpha_1$ is not. This last remark, together with the above computations shows that when $p = 2$ necessarily $\text{Lie } P = \text{Lie } G$. \square

2.6.2. What does not. The only case yet to consider is the following: the characteristic is $p = 2$, the group G is of type G_2 and P is a nonreduced parabolic subgroup satisfying $P_{\text{red}} = P^{\alpha_1}$, the reduced parabolic associated to the short simple root, whose Levi subgroup has root system $\{\pm\alpha_2\}$. Let us place ourselves in this setting: by repeating the same reasoning as above, we can conclude only a weaker statement.

Lemma 2.22. *Assume that one of the two root subspaces associated to $-3\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2$ and $-3\alpha_1 - \alpha_2$ is contained in $\text{Lie } P$. Then $\text{Lie } P = \text{Lie } G$.*

Proof. By (2.12), we have that both root subspaces are in $\text{Lie } P$. Then considering roots $\gamma = -3\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2$, $\delta = \alpha_1 + \alpha_2$ and $\delta' = 2\alpha_1 + \alpha_2$ yields

$$[X_\gamma, X_\delta] = \pm X_{-2\alpha_1 - \alpha_2} \in \text{Lie } P \quad \text{and} \quad [X_\gamma, X_{\delta'}] = \pm X_{-\alpha_1 - \alpha_2} \in \text{Lie } P,$$

because $\gamma - \delta$ and $\gamma - \delta'$ are not roots. This means that if one long root is added then we have to add everything else. \square

The same reasoning applied to short roots fails, due to the vanishing of structure constants in characteristic 2. More precisely, we can identify two Lie subalgebras strictly containing $\text{Lie } P^{\alpha_1}$, which cannot be Lie ideals since $\text{Lie } G$ is a simple p -Lie algebra (see Lemma 1.9) as follows: define the following vector subspaces

$$(2.16) \quad \mathfrak{h} := \text{Lie } P^{\alpha_1} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-2\alpha_1 - \alpha_2} = \text{Lie } B \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_2} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-2\alpha_1 - \alpha_2};$$

$$(2.17) \quad \mathfrak{l} := \text{Lie } P^{\alpha_1} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1 - \alpha_2} = \text{Lie } B \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_2} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1 - \alpha_2}.$$

Lemma 2.23. *With the above notation, \mathfrak{h} and \mathfrak{l} are two p -Lie subalgebras of $\text{Lie } G$.*

Proof. Let $\{X_\gamma : \gamma \in \Phi, H_{\alpha_1}, H_{\alpha_2}\}$ be a Chevalley basis of $\text{Lie } G$. First, using Lemma 2.5 we can calculate a few structure constants which are then useful in the rest of the proof:

	$\text{ad}(X_{-2\alpha_1 - \alpha_2})$	$\text{ad}(X_{-\alpha_1})$	$\text{ad}(X_{-\alpha_1 - \alpha_2})$	$\text{ad}(X_{\alpha_1})$	$\text{ad}(X_{2\alpha_1 + \alpha_2})$
X_{α_1}	0	$\in \text{Lie } T$	$X_{-\alpha_2}$	0	$X_{3\alpha_1 + \alpha_2}$
$X_{3\alpha_1 + \alpha_2}$	X_{α_1}	$X_{2\alpha_1 + \alpha_2}$	0	0	0
$X_{2\alpha_1 + \alpha_2}$	$\in \text{Lie } T$	0	0	$X_{3\alpha_1 + \alpha_2}$	0
$X_{3\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2}$	$X_{\alpha_1 + \alpha_2}$	0	$X_{2\alpha_1 + \alpha_2}$	0	0
$X_{\alpha_1 + \alpha_2}$	0	X_{α_2}	$\in \text{Lie } T$	0	$X_{3\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2}$
X_{α_2}	0	0	$X_{-\alpha_1}$	$X_{\alpha_1 + \alpha_2}$	0
$X_{-\alpha_1}$	$X_{-3\alpha_1 - \alpha_2}$	0	0	$\in \text{Lie } T$	0
$X_{-3\alpha_1 - \alpha_2}$	0	0	0	$X_{-2\alpha_1 - \alpha_2}$	$X_{-\alpha_1}$
$X_{-2\alpha_1 - \alpha_2}$	0	$X_{-3\alpha_1 - \alpha_2}$	$X_{-3\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2}$	0	$\in \text{Lie } T$
$X_{-3\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2}$	0	0	0	0	$X_{-\alpha_1 - \alpha_2}$
$X_{-\alpha_1 - \alpha_2}$	$X_{-3\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2}$	0	0	$X_{-\alpha_2}$	0
$X_{-\alpha_2}$	0	$X_{-\alpha_1 - \alpha_2}$	0	0	0

Let us verify that \mathfrak{h} is a Lie subalgebra. Since we know that $\text{Lie } P^{\alpha_1}$ is one, it is enough to show that $[\mathfrak{g}_{-2\alpha_1 - \alpha_2}, \text{Lie } P^{\alpha_1}] \subset \mathfrak{h}$. Lemma 2.5 implies that

$$[\mathfrak{g}_{-2\alpha_1 - \alpha_2}, \text{Lie } T] = [X_{-2\alpha_1 - \alpha_2}, \text{Lie } T] \subset \mathfrak{g}_{-2\alpha_1 - \alpha_2} \subset \mathfrak{h}.$$

Moreover, the first column of the above table shows that

$$[\mathfrak{g}_{-2\alpha_1 - \alpha_2}, \mathfrak{g}_\gamma] = k[X_{-2\alpha_1 - \alpha_2}, X_\gamma] \subset \mathfrak{h},$$

for all roots γ whose root subspace is contained in $\text{Lie } P^{\alpha_1}$.

Analogously, let us prove that \mathfrak{l} is a Lie subalgebra: for this, it is enough to show that

$$[\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1}, \text{Lie } P^{\alpha_1}], [\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1 - \alpha_2}, \text{Lie } P^{\alpha_1}], [\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1}, \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1 - \alpha_2}] \subset \mathfrak{l}.$$

First, Lemma 2.5 implies that

$$[\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1}, \text{Lie } T] = [X_{-\alpha_1}, \text{Lie } T] \subset \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1} \subset \mathfrak{l};$$

$$[\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1 - \alpha_2}, \text{Lie } T] = [X_{-\alpha_1 - \alpha_2}, \text{Lie } T] \subset \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1 - \alpha_2} \subset \mathfrak{l}.$$

Moreover, the second and third column in the above table show that

$$[\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1}, \mathfrak{g}_\gamma] = k[X_{-\alpha_1}, X_\gamma] \quad \text{and} \quad [\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1 - \alpha_2}, \mathfrak{g}_\gamma] = k[X_{-\alpha_1 - \alpha_2}, X_\gamma]$$

are both subspaces of \mathfrak{l} , for all roots γ whose root subspace is contained in $\text{Lie } P^{\alpha_1}$. To conclude there is still left to show that \mathfrak{h} and \mathfrak{l} are stable by the p -mapping (recall that by assumption $p = 2$), knowing that $\text{Lie } P^{\alpha_1}$ is. In other words, setting Y_γ equal to the image of X_γ by the p -mapping, we want to prove that $Y_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \in \mathfrak{h}$ and that $Y_{-\alpha_1}, Y_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \in \mathfrak{l}$. To do this, let

$$Y_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2} = H + \sum_{\delta \in \Phi} a_\delta X_\delta, \quad \text{for some } a_\delta \in k, H \in \text{Lie } T.$$

It is enough to show that $a_{-\alpha_1} = a_{-3\alpha_1-\alpha_2} = a_{-3\alpha_1-2\alpha_2} = a_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2} = 0$. By the properties of the p -mapping, we have that $\text{ad}(Y_\gamma) = \text{ad}^2(X_\gamma)$ for any root γ . Using that $[X_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}, X_{\alpha_1}]$ vanishes (see table), we have:

$$\begin{aligned} 0 &= \text{ad}(X_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2})([X_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}, X_{\alpha_1}]) = \text{ad}^2(X_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2})(X_{\alpha_1}) \\ &= \text{ad}(Y_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2})(X_{\alpha_1}) = [H, X_{\alpha_1}] + \sum_{\delta \in \Phi} a_\delta [X_\delta, X_{\alpha_1}]. \end{aligned}$$

Expanding all brackets using the fourth column of the above table gives that, for some $a \in k$,

$$0 = aX_{\alpha_1} + a_{2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}X_{3\alpha_1+\alpha_2} + a_{\alpha_2}X_{\alpha_1+\alpha_2} + a_{-\alpha_1}H_{\alpha_1} + a_{-3\alpha_1-\alpha_2}X_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2} + a_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2}X_{-\alpha_2},$$

which implies in particular $a_{-\alpha_1} = a_{-3\alpha_1-\alpha_2} = a_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2} = 0$. Moreover, $[X_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}, X_{\alpha_1}]$ also vanishes, hence we have

$$\begin{aligned} 0 &= \text{ad}(X_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2})([X_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}, X_{\alpha_1+\alpha_2}]) = \text{ad}^2(X_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2})(X_{\alpha_1+\alpha_2}) \\ &= \text{ad}(Y_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2})(X_{\alpha_1+\alpha_2}) = [H, X_{\alpha_1+\alpha_2}] + \sum_{\delta \in \Phi} a_\delta [X_\delta, X_{\alpha_1+\alpha_2}]. \end{aligned}$$

Writing this with respect to the Chevalley basis gives

$$a_{-3\alpha_1-2\alpha_2}[X_{-3\alpha_1-2\alpha_2}, X_{\alpha_1+\alpha_2}] = a_{-3\alpha_1-2\alpha_2}X_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}$$

as the only term in $X_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}$, meaning that the coefficient $a_{-3\alpha_1-2\alpha_2}$ also vanishes, as wanted: thus we can conclude that \mathfrak{h} is a p -Lie subalgebra of $\text{Lie } G$.

Analogously, let

$$Y_{-\alpha_1} = H' + \sum_{\delta \in \Phi} b_\delta X_\delta, \quad \text{for some } b_\delta \in k, H' \in \text{Lie } T,$$

and as before we aim to show that $b_{-3\alpha_1-\alpha_2} = b_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2} = b_{-3\alpha_1-2\alpha_2} = 0$. Using that $[X_{-\alpha_1}, X_{2\alpha_1+\alpha_2}]$ vanishes (see table), we have

$$\begin{aligned} 0 &= \text{ad}(X_{-\alpha_1})([X_{-\alpha_1}, X_{2\alpha_1+\alpha_2}]) = \text{ad}^2(X_{-\alpha_1})([X_{-\alpha_1}, X_{2\alpha_1+\alpha_2}]) \\ &= \text{ad}(Y_{-\alpha_1})(X_{2\alpha_1+\alpha_2}) = [H', X_{2\alpha_1+\alpha_2}] + \sum_{\delta \in \Phi} b_\delta [X_\delta, X_{2\alpha_1+\alpha_2}]. \end{aligned}$$

Expanding all brackets using the last column of the above table gives that, for some $b \in k$ and some $H'' \in \text{Lie } T$,

$$\begin{aligned} 0 &= bX_{2\alpha_1+\alpha_2} + b_{\alpha_1}X_{3\alpha_1+\alpha_2} + b_{\alpha_1+\alpha_2}X_{3\alpha_1+2\alpha_2} + b_{-3\alpha_1-\alpha_2}X_{-\alpha_1} + b_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}H'' \\ &\quad + b_{-3\alpha_1-2\alpha_2}X_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2}. \end{aligned}$$

In particular, this proves that $b_{-3\alpha_1-\alpha_2} = b_{-3\alpha_1-2\alpha_2} = 0$. Moreover, $[X_{-\alpha_1}, X_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2}]$ also vanishes, hence we have

$$\begin{aligned} 0 &= \text{ad}(X_{-\alpha_1})([X_{-\alpha_1}, X_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2}]) = \text{ad}^2(X_{-\alpha_1})([X_{-\alpha_1}, X_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2}]) \\ &= \text{ad}(Y_{-\alpha_1})(X_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2}) = [H', X_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2}] + \sum_{\delta \in \Phi} b_\delta [X_\delta, X_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2}]. \end{aligned}$$

Expanding this with respect to the Chevalley basis gives $b_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}[X_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}, X_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2}] = b_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}X_{-3\alpha_1-2\alpha_2}X_{-3\alpha_1-2\alpha_2}$ as the only term in $X_{-3\alpha_1-2\alpha_2}$, meaning that the coefficient $b_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}$ also vanishes: this proves that $Y_{-\alpha_1} \in \mathfrak{l}$.

To prove that $Y_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2}$ is also in \mathfrak{l} , an analogous computation, symmetric with respect to the reflection s_{α_2} , can be done. Finally, we can conclude that \mathfrak{l} is a p -Lie subalgebra. \square

Corollary 2.24. *The p -Lie subalgebras of $\text{Lie } G$ containing strictly $\text{Lie } P^{\alpha_1}$ are exactly \mathfrak{h} and \mathfrak{l} .*

Proof. Let us consider a p -Lie subalgebra $\text{Lie } P^{\alpha_1} \subsetneq \mathfrak{s} \subset \text{Lie } G$, meaning that there is some positive root $\gamma \neq \alpha_1$ such that $\mathfrak{g}_{-\gamma}$ is contained in \mathfrak{s} . By Lemma 2.22, if γ is long then $\mathfrak{s} = \text{Lie } G$, so we can assume γ to be short. To do this, let us remark that by Lemma 2.5 we have

$$(2.18) \quad [X_{-\alpha_1}, X_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}] = X_{-3\alpha_1-\alpha_2},$$

because $-\alpha_1 - (-2\alpha_1 - \alpha_2)$ and $-\alpha_1 - 2(-2\alpha_1 - \alpha_2)$ are roots while $-\alpha_1 - 3(-2\alpha_1 - \alpha_2)$ is not, hence the structure constant is $3 = 1$. If $\gamma = \alpha_1$, by symmetry with respect to the Weyl group $\{\pm s_{\alpha_2}\}$ of the Levi factor of P^{α_1} we have that $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2}$ is also contained in \mathfrak{s} , hence either $\mathfrak{s} = \mathfrak{l}$ or it also contains $\mathfrak{g}_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}$. The equality (2.18) together with Lemma 2.22 then imply $\mathfrak{s} = \text{Lie } G$. The same reasoning applies when starting by $\gamma = -\alpha_1 - \alpha_2$. On the other hand, starting by $\gamma = 2\alpha_1 + \alpha_2$ implies that either $\mathfrak{s} = \mathfrak{h}$, or it contains also $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2}$, from which we conclude again - by (2.18) and Lemma 2.22 - that $\mathfrak{s} = \text{Lie } G$. \square

Definition 2.25. Let us fix the following notation for the rest of this Section:

- (1) $H := (U_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2})_1$ is the subgroup of height one such that $\text{Lie } H = \mathfrak{g}_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}$, i.e. $\mathfrak{h} = \text{Lie } P^{\alpha_1} \oplus \text{Lie } H$;
- (2) $L := (U_{-\alpha_1})_1 \cdot (U_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2})_1$ is the subgroup of height one such that $\text{Lie } L = \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2}$, i.e. $\mathfrak{l} = \text{Lie } P^{\alpha_1} \oplus \text{Lie } L$;
- (3) $P_{\mathfrak{h}}$ the parabolic subgroup generated by P^{α_1} and H ;
- (4) $P_{\mathfrak{l}}$ the parabolic subgroup generated by P^{α_1} and L .

Let us notice that $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1}$ and $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2}$ commute, so that L is the direct product of the Frobenius kernels defining it.

Remark 2.26. The two parabolic subgroups $P_{\mathfrak{h}}$ and $P_{\mathfrak{l}}$ are *exotic* in the sense that they cannot be of the form $(\ker \varphi)P^{\alpha}$ for some isogeny φ , since when $p = 2$ the only noncentral isogenies in type G_2 are iterated Frobenius homomorphisms (see Proposition 1.12).

In the following part we investigate what the homogeneous spaces having as stabilizer respectively $P_{\mathfrak{h}}$ and $P_{\mathfrak{l}}$ are isomorphic to, as varieties.

2.6.3. Parabolic $P_{\mathfrak{h}}$.

Proposition 2.27. *Let G be simple of type G_2 in characteristic $p = 2$ and $P_{\mathfrak{h}}$ the parabolic subgroup of Definition 2.25. Then the quotient morphism $G/P^{\alpha_1} \rightarrow G/P_{\mathfrak{h}}$ is the natural projection*

$$\mathbf{P}^6 \supset Q := \{x_3^2 + x_2x_4 + x_1x_5 + x_0x_6 = 0\} \rightarrow \mathbf{P}^5, \quad [x_0 : \dots : x_6] \mapsto [x_0 : x_1 : x_2 : x_4 : x_5 : x_6].$$

In particular, the homogeneous space $G/P_{\mathfrak{h}}$ is isomorphic as a variety to $\mathbf{P}^5 = \text{PSp}_6/P^{\alpha_1}$.

In order to construct this morphism, we will see the group G as the automorphism group of an octonion algebra - see the Appendix for more details - which is

$$\mathbb{O} = \{(u, v) : u, v \text{ are } 2 \times 2 \text{ matrices}\},$$

with basis $(e_{11}, e_{12}, e_{21}, e_{22}, f_{11}, f_{12}, f_{21}, f_{22})$, recalled in Subsection 4.1, with unit $e = (1, 0) = e_{11} + e_{22}$, and which is equipped with a norm

$$q(u, v) = \det(u) + \det(v).$$

An embedding of the group G_2 into Sp_6 can be seen as follows: let us consider its action on the vector space

$$V := e^\perp = \{(u, v) : \det(1 + u) + \det(u) = 1\}$$

as in (4.2). Since $p = 2$, we have that $e \in V$ hence the group G also acts on the quotient $W := V/ke$, which has dimension 6. By (4.4) in the Appendix, a maximal torus T of G - with respect to the basis $(f_{12}, f_{11}, e_{12}, e_{21}, f_{22}, f_{21})$ of W - is given by

$$\mathbf{G}_m^2 \ni (a, b) \longmapsto \mathrm{diag}(a, a^{-1}b^{-1}, a^2b, a^{-2}b^{-1}, ab, a^{-1}) = t \in T \subset \mathrm{GL}_6.$$

Let us recall that the basis of simple roots we fix is $\alpha_1(t) := a$ and $\alpha_2(t) := b$, hence V has the following decomposition in weight spaces :

$$\begin{aligned} V_0 &= ke, V_{\alpha_1} = kf_{12}, V_{-\alpha_1} = kf_{21}, V_{\alpha_1+\alpha_2} = kf_{22}, \\ V_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2} &= kf_{11}, V_{2\alpha_1+\alpha_2} = ke_{12}, V_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2} = ke_{21}. \end{aligned}$$

This way, T can be identified with the maximal torus in [He08, page 13]: in Heinloth's description of the embedding $G \subset \mathrm{Sp}_6$ in characteristic 2, given by the action on

$$W = V/ke = W_{\alpha_1} \oplus W_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \oplus W_{2\alpha_1+\alpha_2} \oplus W_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \oplus W_{\alpha_1+\alpha_2} \oplus W_{-\alpha_1},$$

the group G is generated by the two following copies of GL_2 :

$$\theta_1: A \longmapsto \begin{pmatrix} A & & & \\ & A^{(1)} \det A^{-1} & & \\ & & & A \end{pmatrix} \quad \text{and} \quad \theta_2: B \longmapsto \begin{pmatrix} \det B^{-1} & & & \\ & B & & \\ & & B & \\ & & & \det B \end{pmatrix},$$

where $A^{(1)}$ denotes the Frobenius twist applied to A .

Lemma 2.28. *When considering the action of G on $\mathbf{P}(V) = \mathbf{P}^6$, we have*

$$\mathrm{Stab}_G([V_{2\alpha_1+\alpha_2}]) = P^{\alpha_1}.$$

Proof. First, let us prove that P^{α_1} , which is generated by T , $U_{\pm\alpha_2}$ and U_{α_1} , fixes $V_{2\alpha_1+\alpha_2} = ke_{12}$. Clearly the torus does; moreover, the computation of the respective actions of $u_{-\alpha_2}(\lambda)$, $u_{\alpha_2}(\lambda)$ and $u_{\alpha_1}(\lambda)$ on V , done in Remark 4.2, shows that all three fix

$$[e_{12}] = [0 : 0 : 1 : 0 : 0 : 0 : 0].$$

This proves that $P^{\alpha_1} \subset S := \mathrm{Stab}_G([V_{2\alpha_1+\alpha_2}])$. To prove the reverse inclusion, let us remark that no nontrivial subgroup of $U_{-\alpha_1}$ and of $U_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}$ fixes $[e_{12}]$: again by Remark 4.2, we have

$$u_{-\alpha_1}(\lambda) \cdot e_{12} = e_{12} + \lambda f_{22} \quad \text{and} \quad u_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}(\lambda) \cdot e_{12} = e_{12} + \lambda^2 e_{21},$$

thus $U_{-\alpha_1} \cap S = U_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \cap S = 1$.

At this point, we know that $\mathrm{Lie} P^{\alpha_1} \subset S$, hence by Corollary 2.24, $\mathrm{Lie} S$ is either equal to $\mathrm{Lie} P^{\alpha_1}$, to \mathfrak{h} , to \mathfrak{l} or to $\mathrm{Lie} G$. However, $U_{\alpha_1} \cap S = 1$ means $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1}$ is not contained in $\mathrm{Lie} S$, hence the latter cannot be equal to \mathfrak{l} nor to $\mathrm{Lie} G$. Analogously, $U_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \cap S = 1$ means $\mathfrak{g}_{2\alpha_1+\alpha_2}$ is not contained in $\mathrm{Lie} S$, hence $\mathrm{Lie} S$ cannot be equal to \mathfrak{h} . This means that $\mathrm{Lie} S = \mathrm{Lie} P^{\alpha_1}$ hence $S = P^{\alpha_1}$ as wanted. \square

We can now conclude part of the proof of Proposition 2.27. First, let us recall that we are working with the basis $(f_{12}, f_{11}, e_{12}, e, e_{21}, f_{22}, f_{21})$ on V , giving homogeneous coordinates $[x_0 : \cdots : x_6]$ on $\mathbf{P}(V)$: the norm q hence becomes

$$q(x) = x_3^2 + x_2x_4 + x_1x_5 + x_0x_6,$$

and its zero locus in \mathbf{P}^6 is the quadric Q of the Proposition. The point $[e_{12}]$ belongs to Q while $[e]$ does not, and the quotient $W = V/ke$ corresponds to the projection $\mathbf{P}^6 \setminus \{[e]\} \rightarrow \mathbf{P}^5$. Moreover, we have

$$G/P^{\alpha_1} = G/\text{Stab}_G([V_{2\alpha_1+\alpha_2}]) = G \cdot [e_{12}] \hookrightarrow Q$$

Since both are smooth irreducible projective of dimension 5, they coincide. In particular,

$$\underline{\text{Aut}}_{G/P^{\alpha_1}}^0 = \underline{\text{Aut}}_Q^0 = \text{SO}(V) = \text{SO}_7$$

is of type B_3 , as stated in Theorem 2.18.

What is left to prove is that $G/P_{\mathfrak{h}} \simeq \mathbf{P}^5$: to do this, we look at the action of G on W .

Lemma 2.29. *When considering the action of G on $\mathbf{P}(W) = \mathbf{P}^5$, we have*

$$\text{Stab}_G([W_{2\alpha_1+\alpha_2}]) = P_{\mathfrak{h}}.$$

Proof. Let S' be the stabilizer. From the above Lemma we know that P^{α_1} fixes $[V_{2\alpha_1+\alpha_2}]$, hence it also fixes $[W_{2\alpha_1+\alpha_2}]$. Moreover, by Remark (4.2) we have

$$u_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}(\lambda) \cdot [e_{12}] = [0 : 0 : 1 : \lambda^2 : 0 : 0] \quad \text{and} \quad u_{-\alpha_1}(\lambda) \cdot [e_{12}] = [0 : 0 : 1 : 0 : \lambda : 0],$$

meaning that $U_{-\alpha_1} \cap S' = 1$, while

$$H = u_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}(\alpha_p) = U_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \cap S'.$$

In particular, this yields that on one side, $P_{\mathfrak{h}} \subset S'$ hence $\mathfrak{h} \subset \text{Lie } S'$, and on the other side, $\mathfrak{g}_{-\alpha_1}$ is not contained in $\text{Lie } S'$. In particular by Corollary 2.24 $\text{Lie } S' = \mathfrak{h}$ and the only positive root γ satisfying $1 \not\subset U_{-\gamma} \cap S' \subsetneq U_{-\gamma}$ is $-2\alpha_1 - \alpha_2$, hence by [Wen93]

$$U_{S'}^- = \prod_{\gamma \in \Phi^+ : U_{-\gamma} \not\subset S'} (U_{-\gamma} \cap S') = U_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2} \cap S' = H,$$

where U_P^- , following Wenzel's notation, denotes the infinitesimal unipotent subgroup given by the intersection of a parabolic subgroup P with the unipotent radical of the opposite of P_{red} with respect to the Borel B . Thus, we can conclude that $S' = U_{S'}^- \cdot S'_{\text{red}} = H \cdot P^{\alpha_1}$, and the latter must coincide with $P_{\mathfrak{h}}$ by definition. \square

Corollary 2.30. *We have $P_{\mathfrak{h}} = H \cdot P^{\alpha_1}$. More precisely,*

$$U_{P_{\mathfrak{h}}}^- = P_{\mathfrak{h}} \cap R_u^-(P^{\alpha_1}) = P_{\mathfrak{h}} \cap U_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2} = H.$$

Now, let us consider the embedding

$$G/P_{\mathfrak{h}} = G/\text{Stab}_G([W_{2\alpha_1+\alpha_2}]) = G \cdot [e_{12}] \hookrightarrow \mathbf{P}(W) = \mathbf{P}^5.$$

As before, since both are smooth irreducible projective of dimension 5, they coincide. This gives as quotient map

$$(2.19) \quad G/P^{\alpha_1} = Q \rightarrow G/(H \cdot P^{\alpha_1}) = \mathbf{P}^5$$

the projection from $[e]$, which has degree 2 equal to the order of H .

2.6.4. *Parabolic P_1 .* Let us consider the homogeneous space G/P_1 and show that one can realize it in a concrete way using octonions. More precisely, considering the action of $G_2 \subset \text{Sp}_6$ on $W = V/ke$, the parabolic subgroup P_1 is the stabilizer of a 3-dimensional isotropic vector subspace of W , spanned by the root spaces associated to the short positive roots (see Proposition 2.37). To do this, let us consider $\eta := f_{12} \wedge f_{22} \wedge e_{12}$ as element of $\mathbf{P}(\Lambda^3 V)$ and $\bar{\eta}$ the element of $\mathbf{P}(\Lambda^3 W)$ given by the images in W of the three vectors.

Lemma 2.31. *Let G be simple of type G_2 in characteristic $p = 2$ and P_1 the parabolic subgroup of Definition 2.25. When considering the action of G on $\mathbf{P}(\Lambda^3 V)$ and $\mathbf{P}(\Lambda^3 W)$ respectively, we have*

$$\text{Stab}_G(\eta) = P^{\alpha_1} \quad \text{and} \quad \text{Stab}_G(\bar{\eta}) = P_1.$$

Proof. Let us denote as S and S'' the above stabilizers.

First, let us prove that P^{α_1} , which is generated by T , $U_{\pm\alpha_2}$ and U_{α_1} , fixes the subspace $kf_{12} \oplus kf_{22} \oplus ke_{12} \subset V$, whose elements are of the form $(w_0, 0, w_2, 0, 0, w_5, 0)$. The computations of Remark 4.2 in the Appendix give us the following :

$$\begin{aligned} u_{\alpha_2}(\lambda) \cdot (w_0, 0, w_2, 0, 0, w_5, 0) &= (w_0, 0, w_2, 0, 0, \lambda w_0 + w_5, 0), \\ u_{-\alpha_2}(\lambda) \cdot (w_0, 0, w_2, 0, 0, w_5, 0) &= (w_0 + \lambda w_5, 0, w_2, 0, 0, w_5, 0) \\ u_{\alpha_1}(\lambda) \cdot (w_0, 0, w_2, 0, 0, w_5, 0) &= (w_0, 0, w_2 + \lambda w_5, 0, 0, w_5, 0), \end{aligned}$$

meaning that $P^{\alpha_1} \subset S$. Moreover, considering the action of the root subgroups associated to $-\alpha_1$, $-2\alpha_1 - \alpha_2$ and $-\alpha_1 - \alpha_2$, we have the following :

$$\begin{aligned} u_{-\alpha_1}(\lambda) \cdot (w_0, 0, w_2, 0, 0, w_5, 0) &= (w_0, 0, w_2, \lambda w_0, 0, \lambda w_2 + w_5, \lambda^2 w_0), \\ u_{-2\alpha_1 - \alpha_2}(\lambda) \cdot (w_0, 0, w_2, 0, 0, w_5, 0) &= (w_0, \lambda w_0, w_2, \lambda w_2, \lambda^2 w_2, w_5, \lambda w_5), \\ u_{-\alpha_1 - \alpha_2}(\lambda) \cdot (w_0, 0, w_2, 0, 0, w_5, 0) &= (w_0 + \lambda w_2, \lambda^2 w_5, w_2, \lambda w_5, 0, w_5, 0). \end{aligned}$$

These computations imply that $\text{Lie } S$ has trivial intersection with the root subspaces associated to short negative roots. Thus by Corollary 2.24 $\text{Lie } S = \text{Lie } P^{\alpha_1}$, which allows to conclude that $S = P^{\alpha_1}$.

Next, let us consider the action of G on the quotient $W = V/ke$. The second computation just above yields that the intersection $U_{-2\alpha_2 - \alpha_1} \cap S''$ is trivial, hence $\mathfrak{g}_{-2\alpha_1 - \alpha_2}$ is not contained in $\text{Lie } S''$ and the latter cannot be equal to $\text{Lie } G$ nor to \mathfrak{h} . The other two equalities imply that $U_{-\alpha_1} \cap S'' = u_{-\alpha_1}(\alpha_p)$ and $U_{-\alpha_1 - \alpha_2} \cap S'' = u_{-\alpha_1 - \alpha_2}(\alpha_p)$, meaning that $\text{Lie } S'' = \mathfrak{l}$. In particular, the positive roots γ satisfying $1 \not\subseteq U_{-\gamma} \cap S' \not\subseteq U_{-\gamma}$ are α_1 and $\alpha_1 + \alpha_2$: by [Wen93], we have

$$U_{S''}^- = \prod_{\gamma \in \Phi^+ : U_{-\gamma} \not\subseteq S''} (U_{-\gamma} \cap S'') = (U_{-\alpha_1 - \alpha_2} \cap S'') \cdot (U_{-\alpha_1} \cap S'') = L.$$

Thus, we can conclude that $S'' = U_{S''}^- \cdot S''_{\text{red}} = L \cdot P^{\alpha_1}$, and the latter must coincide with P_1 by definition. \square

Corollary 2.32. *We have $P_1 = L \cdot P^{\alpha_1}$. More precisely,*

$$U_{P_1}^- = P_1 \cap R_u^-(P^{\alpha_1}) = (P_1 \cap U_{-\alpha_1 - \alpha_2}) \cdot (P_1 \cap U_{-\alpha_1}) = L.$$

Next, let us determine an explicit equation for the variety Q , which will help us describe X geometrically. Recall that - keeping the notation from Proposition 2.12 - the reduced parabolic subgroup associated to the short root α_3 in type B_3 , which is denoted $P_3 = P^{\alpha_3} \subset \text{SO}_7$, is the stabilizer of an isotropic subspace of dimension 3, hence

$$P_1 = \text{Stab}_G([f_{12} \wedge f_{22} \wedge e_{12}]) = G \cap P_3 = G \cap \text{Stab}_{\text{SO}_7}([f_{12} \wedge f_{22} \wedge e_{12}]).$$

The following holds in any characteristic and is a consequence of [SV00, Lemma 1.3.2] and of the fact that by definition $\bar{x} = -x$ for all $x \in V$.

Lemma 2.33. *There is a well-defined alternating form*

$$\nu: \Lambda^3 V \longrightarrow k, \quad (x, y, z) \longmapsto \langle xy, z \rangle.$$

Clearly there is an inclusion

$$(2.20) \quad G_2 \subset \{u \in \mathrm{SO}_7: \nu(ux, uy, uz) = \nu(x, y, z) \text{ for all } x, y, z \in V\} \subset \mathrm{SO}_7.$$

Proposition 2.34. *Let us denote as H the hyperplane defined by $\nu = 0$ in $\mathbf{P}(\Lambda^3 V)$ and as H' its intersection with the quotient SO_7/P_3 . Then we have the equality $H' = 2Q$ as Weil divisors on SO_7/P_3 .*

Proof. Recall that Q is irreducible of dimension 5 while SO_7/P_3 is irreducible of dimension 6. Let us consider Q and SO_7/P_3 respectively as the G_2 -orbit and the SO_7 -orbit of the point η in $\mathbf{P}(\Lambda^3 V)$. First, we have $\nu(\eta) = \nu(f_{12}, f_{22}, e_{12}) = \langle f_{12}f_{22}, e_{12} \rangle = \langle e_{12}, e_{12} \rangle = 0$, hence by (2.20) we have $\nu(Q) = 0$, which gives an inclusion of Q into the intersection $H' = H \cap \mathrm{SO}_7/P_3$. Moreover, SO_7/P_3 is not contained in the hyperplane H : consider $u \in \mathrm{SO}_7$ given by permuting f_{12} with f_{21} and f_{22} with f_{11} , then we have

$$\nu(u\eta) = \nu(uf_{12}, uf_{22}, ue_{12}) = \nu(f_{21}, f_{11}, e_{12}) = \langle f_{21}f_{11}, e_{12} \rangle = \langle e_{21}, e_{12} \rangle = 1.$$

By [Har77, III, Corollary 7.9], H' is connected because it is the intersection of a hyperplane in $\mathbf{P}(\Lambda^3 V)$ with a smooth projective variety. Moreover, it is equidimensional of dimension 5: let us write it as $H' = Q \cup H''$ where H'' is the union of all other irreducible components of H' . Since H'' is G_2 -stable, if it were not empty it should have trivial intersection with Q because the latter is a G_2 -orbit. This would contradict the connectedness of H' . The variety Q is hence the reduced part of the divisor H' in SO_7/P_3 .

Next, let us give an explicit equation for ν : let $x, y, z \in V$ and set

$$\begin{aligned} x &= a_0f_{12} + a_1f_{22} + a_2e_{12} + a_3e + a_4f_{21} + a_5f_{11} + a_6e_{21}, \\ y &= b_0f_{12} + b_1f_{22} + b_2e_{12} + b_3e + b_4f_{21} + b_5f_{11} + b_6e_{21}, \\ z &= c_0f_{12} + c_1f_{22} + c_2e_{12} + c_3e + c_4f_{21} + c_5f_{11} + c_6e_{21}, \end{aligned}$$

for appropriate coefficients $a_i, b_i, c_i \in k$. Using the product of octonions - see table (4.1) - one gets

$$\begin{aligned} xy &= (a_5b_1 + a_2b_4 + a_3b_3 + a_6b_0)e_{11} + (a_0b_1 + a_2b_3 + a_3b_2 + a_1b_0)e_{12} \\ &\quad + (a_5b_6 + a_3b_4 + a_4b_3 + a_6b_5)e_{21} + (a_0b_6 + a_3b_3 + a_4b_2 + a_1b_5)e_{22} \\ &\quad + (a_5b_3 + a_0b_4 + a_3b_5 + a_4b_0)f_{11} + (a_0b_3 + a_5b_2 + a_2b_5 + a_3b_0)f_{12} \\ &\quad + (a_3b_6 + a_4b_1 + a_1b_4 + a_6b_3)f_{21} + (a_3b_1 + a_1b_3 + a_6b_2 + a_2b_6)f_{22}. \end{aligned}$$

Another direct computation gives

$$\begin{aligned} \nu(x, y, z) &= a_0b_1c_4 + a_0b_4c_1 + a_1b_0c_4 + a_1b_4c_0 + a_4b_0c_1 + a_4b_1c_0 \\ &\quad + a_0b_3c_6 + a_0b_6c_3 + a_3b_0c_6 + a_3c_6b_0 + a_6b_0c_3 + a_6b_3c_0 \\ &\quad + a_1b_3c_5 + a_1b_5c_3 + a_3b_1c_5 + a_3b_5c_1 + a_5b_1c_3 + a_5b_3c_1 \\ &\quad + a_2b_3c_4 + a_2b_4c_3 + a_3b_2c_4 + a_3b_4c_2 + a_4b_2c_3 + a_4b_3c_2 \\ &\quad + a_2b_5c_6 + a_2b_6c_5 + a_5b_2c_6 + a_5b_6c_2 + a_6b_2c_5 + a_6b_5c_2. \end{aligned}$$

Let us exploit the above computation to obtain an equation for Q in the open Bruhat cell C of SO_7/P_3 , which is an affine space of dimension 6 given by the orbit $U \cdot \eta$ where

$$U = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} 1 & & & & & & \\ 0 & 1 & & & & & \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & & & & \\ a_3 & b_3 & c_3 & 1 & & & \\ a_4 & b_4 & c_4 & h_4 & 1 & & \\ a_5 & b_5 & c_5 & h_5 & 0 & 1 & \\ a_6 & b_6 & c_6 & h_6 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \in \mathrm{SO}_7 \right\},$$

where we order V with respect to the basis $(f_{12}, f_{22}, e_{12}, e, e_{21}, f_{11}, f_{21})$ i.e. we exchange f_{22} and f_{11} from the usual ordering, in order to have an easier block decomposition with the 3-dimensional subspace η in the first block.

The condition of such a matrix being in SO_7 implies $a_6 = a_3^2$, $b_5 = b_3^2$, $c_4 = c_3^2$, $b_6 = a_5$, $c_6 = a_4$, $c_5 = b_4$ and $h_4 = h_5 = h_6 = 0$, hence for dimension reasons we have

$$C = U \cdot \eta \simeq \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} 1 & & & & & & \\ 0 & 1 & & & & & \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & & & & \\ \lambda_1 & \lambda_2 & \lambda_3 & 1 & & & \\ \lambda_4 & \lambda_5 & \lambda_3^2 & 0 & 1 & & \\ \lambda_6 & \lambda_2^2 & \lambda_5 & 0 & 0 & 1 & \\ \lambda_1^2 & \lambda_6 & \lambda_4 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} : \lambda_i \in k \right\} \simeq \mathbf{A}^6.$$

By substituting in the above expression for ν , we obtain that the intersection $C \cap H$ is given by the equation

$$\lambda_3^2 + \lambda_6 \lambda_3 + \lambda_2 \lambda_4 + \lambda_1 \lambda_5 + \lambda_6 \lambda_3 + \lambda_1 \lambda_5 + \lambda_4 \lambda_2 + \lambda_6^2 + \lambda_1^2 \lambda_2^2 = (\lambda_3 + \lambda_6 + \lambda_1 \lambda_2)^2,$$

hence $Q \cap C$ has equation $\lambda_3 + \lambda_6 + \lambda_1 \lambda_2 = 0$ and we obtain the equality $H' = 2Q$. \square

Lemma 2.35. *Consider the embedding of $Q = G/P^{\alpha_1}$ into $\mathbf{P}(\Lambda^3 V)$ and denote as \mathcal{L} and \mathcal{M} the unique ample generators respectively of the Picard group of Q and of SO_7/P_3 . Then the equality $\mathcal{L}^{\otimes 2} = \mathcal{O}_Q(1)$ holds.*

Proof. In Proposition 2.34, the embedding

$$(2.21) \quad Q \hookrightarrow Y := \mathrm{SO}_7/P_3 \hookrightarrow \mathbf{P}(\Lambda^3 V)$$

realises the divisor $2Q$ as a hyperplane section of the variety Y .

Next, let us express the latter as $Y = \mathrm{Spin}_7/Q_3$, where Q_3 is the maximal reduced parabolic subgroup associated to the short simple root in Spin_7 . The line in V corresponding to such a root is $V_{2\alpha_1+\alpha_2} = ke_{12}$. Since Spin_7 is simply connected, the Picard group of Y identifies with the group of characters of Q_3 , which has a unique ample generator \mathcal{M} with associated weight ϖ_3 , which is the third fundamental weight of Spin_7 . Since Y is a standard flag variety (with reduced stabilizer), the line bundle \mathcal{M} is also very ample, and the same holds for its restriction to X . Considering the embedding (2.21), the weight at the base point of $\mathbf{P}(\Lambda^3 V)$ is $2\varpi_3$ hence $\mathcal{O}_Y(1)$ has also associated weight $2\varpi_3$. Restricting to X gives the equality

$$(2.22) \quad (\mathcal{M}|_Q)^{\otimes 2} = \mathcal{O}_Q(1).$$

Now, let λ be the weight associated to λ : then there must be some $n \geq 1$ such that $\mathcal{L}^{\otimes n} = \mathcal{O}_Q(1)$, thus $n\lambda = 2\varpi$. The only two possibilities are $n = 1$ and $n = 2$. However, assuming $n = 1$ would imply that $\mathcal{O}_Q(1)$ generates the Picard group of X , which is a contradiction with

(2.22). Hence we can conclude that $n = 2$ and in particular \mathcal{L} is the restriction of \mathcal{M} to Q , so we are done. \square

Corollary 2.36. *The variety Q is a hyperplane section of Y relative to the very ample line bundle \mathcal{M} .*

Proof. We can see the class of Q as a divisor in $\text{Pic } Y = \mathbf{Z}\mathcal{M}$: this means that, under the embedding of Y into $\mathbf{P}(H^0(X, \mathcal{L})^\vee)$, it is the class of the zero locus of a global section. The equality $\mathcal{L}^{\otimes 2} = \mathcal{O}_Q(1)$ proved in Lemma 2.35 means that the canonical section of Q , which is an element of $H^0(Y, \mathcal{M})$, is a square root of the section ν described in Proposition 2.34. \square

The above description of the variety Q holds in any characteristic. The case of characteristic two is peculiar because there exists an embedding of G_2 into Sp_6 , together with the very special isogeny described in Example 1.15. We will now use these two ingredients to get a geometric description of X , starting from the above realisation of the variety Q and the natural quotient morphism $Q \rightarrow X$, induced by the inclusion of $P^{\alpha_1} = (P_1)_{\text{red}}$ into P_1 .

Let us consider the following commutative diagram, which is induced by the quotient $W = V/ke$ and the associated purely inseparable isogeny $\varphi: \text{SO}(V) = \text{SO}_7 \rightarrow \text{Sp}_6 = \text{Sp}(W)$, with kernel $N := N_{\text{SO}_7}$. Let us recall that, by Lemma 2.31, Q is the G_2 -orbit of the 3-dimensional subspace defined by the short root vectors in $\Lambda^3 V$, while X is the G_2 -orbit of the 3-dimensional subspace defined by the short root vectors in $\Lambda^3 W$.

$$\begin{array}{ccc} Q = G_2/P^{\alpha_1} & \xrightarrow{g} & X = G_2/P_1 \\ \downarrow & & \downarrow \\ Y := \text{SO}_7/P_3 & \xrightarrow{f} & Z := \text{Sp}_6/P'_3 = \text{SO}_7/(NP_3) \\ \downarrow & & \downarrow \\ \mathbf{P}(\Lambda^3 V) & \dashrightarrow & \mathbf{P}(\Lambda^3 W) \end{array}$$

Proposition 2.37. *The line bundle $\mathcal{O}_Z(X)$ satisfies the equality $\text{Pic } Z = \mathbf{Z}\mathcal{O}_Z(X)$. In particular, X can be realised as a hyperplane section of Z with respect to the unique (very) ample generator of $\text{Pic } Z$.*

Proof. By Corollary 2.36, the Picard group of Y is generated by $\mathcal{O}_Y(Q)$, hence Q satisfies $Q \cdot \tilde{C} = 1$, where we denote respectively as \tilde{C} and C the Schubert curves (associated to the short simple root α_3 in type B_3 and the long simple root α'_3 in type C_3) in Y and in Z . The morphism f is finite locally free of degree 8, which corresponds to the order of

$$NP_3/P_3 = N/(N \cap P_3).$$

Indeed, as seen in Example 1.15, the subgroup $N \subset \text{SO}_7$ has height one and Lie algebra $\mathfrak{n} = \mathfrak{g}_{<}$ of dimension 6, hence the order of N is 2^6 . On the other hand, the order of $N \cap P_3$ is 2^3 because

$$\text{Lie}(N \cap P_3) = \mathfrak{n} \cap \text{Lie } P_3 = \mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_1 - \varepsilon_2} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_1 - \varepsilon_3} \oplus \mathfrak{g}_{-\varepsilon_2 - \varepsilon_3}$$

has dimension 3. In particular, this means that $f_* f^* X = 8X$ seen as elements of $\text{Pic } Z$.

On the other hand, g is finite locally free of degree 4: the latter is the order of L , the unipotent infinitesimal part of P_1 . Thus we also have $f_* Q = 4X$: putting the two equalities together implies $f^* X = 2Q$ in the Picard group of Y .

Next we notice that α_3 is a short root in type B_3 , hence the very special isogeny acts as a

Frobenius morphism on the corresponding copy of the additive group in SO_7 . In other words, the set theoretic equality $f(\tilde{C}) = C$ becomes $f_*\tilde{C} = 2C$ on 1-cycles. In particular,

$$2 = 2Q \cdot \tilde{C} = f^*X \cdot \tilde{C} = X \cdot f_*\tilde{C} = 2X \cdot C.$$

This last computation together with the fact that $\mathrm{Pic} Z \simeq \mathbf{Z}$ allows to conclude that the line bundle associated to X generates the Picard group of Z . \square

Up to this point we have realized the variety $X = G/P_1$ using octonions. In particular, this construction provides a new example (besides projective spaces and quadrics) of a hyperplane section X of a homogeneous variety (Z, \mathcal{L}) , such that X is also homogeneous and \mathcal{L} generates the Picard group of Z . One might ask whether Theorem 2.1 still holds for the variety X . Actually this is not the case, as illustrated in the following result.

Proposition 2.38. *Let G be simple of type G_2 in characteristic $p = 2$ and P_1 the parabolic subgroup of Definition 2.25. Then G/P_1 is not isomorphic, as a variety, to a quotient of the form G'/P^α for any G' simple and $\alpha \in \Delta(G')$.*

In particular, this means that Theorem 2.1 does not hold in this case.

Lemma 2.39. *Let G' be simple and let α be a simple root of G' . If $\dim(G'/P^\alpha) = 5$, then such a variety is either isomorphic to $Q \subset \mathbf{P}^6$, to \mathbf{P}^5 or to G/P^{α_2} where G is of type G_2 and α_2 is the long root.*

Proof. Let us recall that $\dim(G'/P^\alpha) = |\Phi^+(G)| - |\Phi^+(L^\alpha)|$, where $L^\alpha = P^\alpha \cap (P^\alpha)^-$ is a Levi subgroup, hence so we can compute this quantity explicitly in each case.

Type A_{n-1} : for $1 \leq m \leq n-1$,

$$\dim(G'/P^{\alpha_m}) = m(n-m) = 5$$

when $(n, m) = (6, 5)$ or $(6, 1)$. In that case, $G'/P^{\alpha_1} = G'/P^{\alpha_5} \simeq \mathbf{P}^5$.

Type B_n : the number of positive roots is n^2 .

- For $1 \leq m \leq n-1$, the Levi subgroup $P^{\alpha_m} \cap (P^{\alpha_m})^-$ is of type $A_{m-1} \times B_{n-m}$, so

$$\dim(G'/P^{\alpha_m}) = n^2 - \frac{m(m-1)}{2} - (n-m)^2 = m \left(\frac{1-m}{2} + 2n-m \right) = 5$$

which only has as positive integer solution the pairs $(n, m) = (4, 5)$, which is absurd, and $(n, m) = (3, 1)$. In that case, $G' = \mathrm{SO}_7$ and by Theorem 2.18 and Proposition 2.27 we have $\mathrm{SO}_7/P^{\alpha_1} \simeq G/P^{\alpha_1} \simeq Q \subset \mathbf{P}^6$.

- Considering the last simple root, $P^{\alpha_n} \cap (P^{\alpha_n})^-$ is of type A_{n-1} and

$$\dim(G'/P^{\alpha_n}) = n^2 - \frac{n(n-1)}{2} = \frac{n(n+1)}{2}$$

is never equal to 5.

Type C_n : the same computations as in type B_n give $(n, m) = (3, 1)$, meaning $G' = \mathrm{PSP}_6$ and - again by Theorem 2.18 - we have $\mathrm{PSP}_6/P^{\alpha_1} = \mathrm{PSL}_6/P^{\alpha_1} \simeq \mathbf{P}^5$.

Type D_n : the number of positive roots is $n(n-1)$.

- For $1 \leq m \leq n-4$, the Levi subgroup is of type $A_{m-1} \times D_{n-m}$, so

$$\dim(G'/P^{\alpha_m}) = n(n-1) - \frac{m(m-1)}{2} - (n-m)(n-m-1) = m \left(\frac{1-m}{2} + 2n-m-1 \right) = 5$$

which has no positive integer solutions (n, m) .

- For $m = n-3$, the Levi subgroup is of type $A_{n-4} \times A_3$, so

$$\dim(G'/P^{\alpha_m}) = n(n-1) - \frac{(n-3)(n-4)}{2} - 6 = 5,$$

which gives $n^2 + 5n = 34$ hence no integer solutions.

- For $m = n - 2$, the Levi subgroup is of type $A_{n-3} \times A_1 \times A_1$, so

$$\dim(G'/P^{\alpha_m}) = n(n-1) - \frac{(n-2)(n-3)}{2} - 1 - 1 = 5,$$

which gives $n^2 + 3n = 20$ hence no integer solutions.

- For $m = n - 1$ or $m = n$, the Levi subgroup is of type A_{n-1} , so

$$\dim(G'/P^{\alpha_m}) = n(n-1) - \frac{n(n-1)}{2} = \frac{n(n-1)}{2} = 5,$$

which is never equal to 5.

Type E_6 : the number of positive roots is 36, and the following table

E_6	α_1	α_2	α_3	α_4	α_5	α_6
L^α	D_5	$A_4 \times A_1 \times A_1$	$A_2 \times A_2 \times A_1$	$A_4 \times A_1$	D_5	A_5
$ \Phi^+(L^\alpha) $	20	11	7	11	20	15
$\dim(G/P^\alpha)$	16	25	29	25	16	21

shows that the desired quantity is never equal to 5.

Type E_7 : the number of positive roots is 63 and the following table

E_7	α_1	α_2	α_3	α_4	α_5	α_6	α_7
L^α	D_6	$A_5 \times A_1$	$A_1 \times A_2 \times A_3$	$A_4 \times A_2$	$D_5 \times A_1$	E_6	A_6
$ \Phi^+(L^\alpha) $	30	16	10	13	21	36	21
$\dim(G/P^\alpha)$	33	47	53	50	42	27	42

shows that the desired quantity is never equal to 5.

Type E_8 : the number of positive roots is 120 and the following table

E_8	α_1	α_2	α_3	α_4	α_5	α_6	α_7	α_8
L^α	D_7	$A_6 \times A_1$	$A_1 \times A_2 \times A_4$	$A_4 \times A_3$	$D_5 \times A_2$	$E_6 \times A_1$	E_7	A_7
$ \Phi^+(L^\alpha) $	42	22	14	16	23	37	63	28
$\dim(G/P^\alpha)$	78	98	106	104	97	83	57	92

shows that the desired quantity is never equal to 5.

Type F_4 : a direct computation - see Subsection 2.5 - gives

$$\dim(G'/P^{\alpha_1}) = \dim(G'/P^{\alpha_4}) = 15 \quad \text{and} \quad \dim(G'/P^{\alpha_2}) = \dim(G'/P^{\alpha_3}) = 20.$$

Type G_2 : as we already know, both $G/P^{\alpha_1} = Q$ and G/P^{α_2} have dimension 5. \square

Lemma 2.40. *The variety $X = G/P_\Gamma$ is not isomorphic to \mathbf{P}^5 nor to Q .*

Proof. Let us consider the quotient map $f: G/P^{\alpha_1} \rightarrow G/P_\Gamma$. By Corollary 2.32 we have $P_\Gamma = L \cdot P^{\alpha_1}$, hence the morphism f is finite, purely inseparable and of degree 4. Assume $X \simeq \mathbf{P}^5$, then we get $f: Q \rightarrow \mathbf{P}^5$. Considering the line bundle $\mathcal{O}_Q(1) = \mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{P}^6}(1)|_Q$, we have that $\text{Pic } Q = \mathbf{Z} \cdot \mathcal{O}_Q(1)$ and $f^*\mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{P}^5}(1) = \mathcal{O}_Q(m)$ for some $m > 0$, since it has sections. Taking degrees, this gives on the left hand side

$$\begin{aligned} & f^*\mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{P}^5}(1) \cdot f^*\mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{P}^5}(1) \cdot f^*\mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{P}^5}(1) \cdot f^*\mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{P}^5}(1) \cdot f^*\mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{P}^5}(1) \\ &= (\deg f) (\mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{P}^5}(1) \cdot \mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{P}^5}(1) \cdot \mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{P}^5}(1) \cdot \mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{P}^5}(1) \cdot \mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{P}^5}(1)) = \deg f, \end{aligned}$$

so we get $\deg f = 4$. On the right hand side, this equals

$$\begin{aligned} & \mathcal{O}_Q(m) \cdot \mathcal{O}_Q(m) \cdot \mathcal{O}_Q(m) \cdot \mathcal{O}_Q(m) \cdot \mathcal{O}_Q(m) \\ &= \rho^*\mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{P}^5}(m) \cdot \rho^*\mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{P}^5}(m) \cdot \rho^*\mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{P}^5}(m) \cdot \rho^*\mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{P}^5}(m) \cdot \rho^*\mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{P}^5}(m) \\ &= (\deg \rho) (\mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{P}^5}(m) \cdot \mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{P}^5}(m) \cdot \mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{P}^5}(m) \cdot \mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{P}^5}(m) \cdot \mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{P}^5}(m)) = (\deg \rho \cdot m^5), \end{aligned}$$

which has degree $2m^5$, where ρ is the projection of Proposition 2.27. Comparing degrees one gets $4 = 2m^5$, which is absurd.

Now, let us assume instead that $X \simeq Q$, then $f: Q \rightarrow Q$ is of degree 4 and again $f^*\mathcal{O}_Q(1) = \mathcal{O}_Q(r)$ for some $r > 0$: the analogous computation of degrees yields $8 = 2r^5$, which is again absurd. \square

Lemma 2.41. *The variety $X = G/P_\mathfrak{l}$ is not isomorphic to G/P^{α_2} .*

Proof. Assume $X \simeq G/P^{\alpha_2}$, then the G -action on X is given by a morphism $\theta: G \rightarrow \underline{\text{Aut}}_{G/P^{\alpha_2}}^0$, the latter being equal to G by Theorem 2.18. In particular, θ is an isogeny which satisfies $\theta^{-1}(P^{\alpha_2}) = P_\mathfrak{l}$. This means that there is some $g \in G(k)$ such that

$$(\ker \theta) \cdot gP^{\alpha_2}g^{-1} = P_\mathfrak{l}.$$

Since $\ker \theta$ is finite, taking the connected component of the identity and the reduced subscheme on both sides implies that P^{α_2} and P^{α_1} are conjugate in G , which is a contradiction. \square

The above study of $P_\mathfrak{h}$ and $P_\mathfrak{l}$ does not complete the classification (in characteristic 2) of homogeneous spaces having as stabilizer a parabolic subgroup whose reduced part is equal to P^{α_1} . Let us consider a simple group G of type G_2 and a nonreduced parabolic subgroup $P \subset G$ satisfying $P_{\text{red}} = P^{\alpha_1}$, in characteristic $p = 2$. Moreover, let us assume that $\text{Lie } P \neq \text{Lie } G$, i.e. that $\text{Lie } P$ is equal to \mathfrak{h} (resp. \mathfrak{l}) and let us write it as $P = U_P^- \cdot P_{\text{red}}$, where $U_P^- = P \cap R_u^-(P_{\text{red}})$: in particular, it is contained in $U_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}$ (resp. in $U_{-\alpha_1} \cdot U_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2}$) and its order is $|U_P^-| = 2^n$ for some $n \geq 2$, the case $n = 1$ being $P_\mathfrak{h}$ treated above.

2.6.5. *End of classification.* Recall that we follow here the notation from [Wen93]: for a parabolic subgroup P , we denote as U_P^- the intersection of P with the unipotent radical of the opposite of P_{red} .

Lemma 2.42. *Let P be a parabolic subgroup such that $\text{Lie } P = \mathfrak{h}$. Then its unipotent infinitesimal part U_P^- has height one.*

Proof. The reduced part of P is P^{α_1} , hence U_P^- must be of the form $u_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}(\alpha_{p^n})$ for some n . Let us assume that n is at least equal to 2. This means that there is some $\lambda \in \mathbf{G}_a$ such that $\lambda^2 \neq 0$ and $u_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}(\lambda) \in P$. Let us consider $\mu \in \mathbf{G}_a$ and compute the following commutator, which gives an element of P :

$$\begin{aligned} (u_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}(\lambda), u_{\alpha_1}(\mu)) &= u_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}(\lambda)u_{\alpha_1}(\mu)u_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}(-\lambda)u_{\alpha_1}(-\mu) = (u_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}(\lambda)u_{\alpha_1}(\mu))^2 \\ &= \left(\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ \lambda & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \lambda^2 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \lambda & 1 \end{pmatrix} \cdot \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \mu^2 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & \mu & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & \mu & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \right)^2 = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \lambda\mu^2 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & \mu\lambda^2 & 0 & 0 & \lambda\mu^2 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & \mu\lambda^2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}. \end{aligned}$$

The last quantity, when assuming $\mu^2 = 0$, coincides with $u_{-3\alpha_1-2\alpha_2}(\mu\lambda^2)$, which is a contradiction with the fact that $\text{Lie } P = \mathfrak{h}$ does not intersect the root subspace associated to the root $-3\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2$. \square

Lemma 2.43. *Let P be a parabolic subgroup such that $\text{Lie } P = \mathfrak{l}$. Then its unipotent infinitesimal part U_P^- has height one.*

Proof. As before, the reduced part of P is P^{α_1} . Moreover, the unipotent part U_P^- has nontrivial and finite intersection with $U_{-\alpha_1}$ and $U_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2}$, of height m_1 and m_2 respectively. Assuming the height of U_P^- to be at least equal to 2 means we have (up to a reflection by s_{α_2}) that

$m_2 \geq 2$. Thus, let $\lambda \in \mathbf{G}_a$ such that $\lambda^2 \neq 0$ and $\mu \in \alpha_p$, so that $u_{-\alpha_1}(\mu) \in P$. Then the following commutator also belongs to P :

$$\begin{aligned} (u_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2}(\lambda), u_{-\alpha_1}(\mu)) &= u_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2}(\lambda)u_{-\alpha_1}(\mu)u_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2}(-\lambda)u_{-\alpha_1}(-\mu) = (u_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2}(\lambda)u_{-\alpha_1}(\mu))^2 \\ &= \left(\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & \lambda & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & \lambda^2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & \lambda \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \cdot \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \mu & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \mu & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ \mu^2 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \right)^2 = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & \mu\lambda^2 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ \lambda\mu^2 & 0 & 0 & 1 & \mu\lambda^2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \lambda\mu^2 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}. \end{aligned}$$

The last quantity coincides again with $u_{-3\alpha_1-2\alpha_2}(\mu\lambda^2)$, so we conclude as before. \square

Definition 2.44. For an integer $m \geq 0$, we denote as H_m and L_m the pull-back respectively of the subgroups H and L under an m -th iterated Frobenius morphism.

Proposition 2.45. *Let G be of type G_2 in characteristic two.*

Then the nonreduced parabolic subgroups of G having P^{α_1} as reduced part are all of the form $G_m P^{\alpha_1}$, $H_m P^{\alpha_1}$ or $L_m P^{\alpha_1}$ for some $m \geq 0$.

Proof. Let us consider such a subgroup P : its Lie algebra contains strictly $\text{Lie } P^{\alpha_1}$, hence by Corollary 2.24 it is either equal to $\text{Lie } G$, to \mathfrak{h} or to \mathfrak{l} . If $\text{Lie } P = \text{Lie } G$, then there is a unique integer $m \geq 1$ such that the Frobenius kernel G_m is contained in P while G_{m+1} is not. Considering the quotient $P' := P/G_m$ allows to assume that the Lie algebra of P' is strictly contained in the one of G . Next, if $\text{Lie } P' = \mathfrak{h}$ (resp. \mathfrak{l}), by Lemma 2.42 and Lemma 2.43, we have that $P' = P_{\mathfrak{h}}$ (resp. $P_{\mathfrak{l}}$). Thus, the parabolic P is obtained from P^{α_1} , $P_{\mathfrak{h}}$ or $P_{\mathfrak{l}}$ by pulling back with an iterated Frobenius morphism, and we are done. \square

This completes the proof of Theorem 2.17 and thus gives a complete classification of homogeneous varieties with Picard group \mathbf{Z} , which ends the proof of Theorem 1.

Remark 2.46. The last result, together with Proposition 2.37, has as consequence the fact that any ample line bundle on an homogeneous variety of Picard rank one is very ample, without any assumption of type nor characteristic.

Remark 2.47. Let us cite a reason why the geometry of a general projective homogeneous variety of Picard rank one may differ from the one of a generalized flag variety. This comes from the following generalization of a question of Lazarsfeld (see the end of [Laz83]): if $X = G/P$ has Picard group isomorphic to \mathbf{Z} and there is some surjective morphism $f: X \rightarrow Y$, then is Y isomorphic to X ? First, the iterated Frobenius morphisms $G/P \rightarrow G/G_m P$ do not give a counterexample. However, the maps

$$G/P^{\alpha} \longrightarrow G/N_G P^{\alpha} \quad \text{and} \quad G_2/P^{\alpha_1} \longrightarrow G_2/P_{\mathfrak{l}},$$

defined respectively under the edge hypothesis and in characteristic 2, are counterexamples. Both these examples are purely inseparable surjective morphisms: the next natural step would be adding the hypothesis for the morphism f to be generically étale.

3. CONSEQUENCES AND HIGHER PICARD RANKS

We state here - in all types but G_2 - the desired modification of Wenzel's description of parabolic subgroups having as reduced subgroup a maximal one: they are all obtained by fattening the reduced part with the kernel of a noncentral isogeny, which generalizes to this setting the role of the Frobenius in characteristic $p \geq 5$. We then give a criterion to determine when two homogeneous spaces with Picard rank one have the same underlying variety. Moving

on to a different setting, we consider spaces G/P with higher Picard ranks. First, using the Białynicki-Birula decomposition allows us to describe explicitly classes of curves and divisors on such varieties. This description is then used to establish a family of examples - in Picard rank two - of homogeneous spaces which are not isomorphic as varieties to those having a stabilizer a parabolic subgroup of standard type, i.e. of the form $G_{m_1}P^{\alpha_1} \cap \dots \cap G_{m_r}P^{\alpha_r}$ for some integers m_i and simple roots α_i .

3.1. Consequences in rank one. In the following Subsection we complete the study in the case of Picard rank one. Due to Proposition 2.38, let us make the assumption that the group G is not of type G_2 in characteristic two.

3.1.1. Classification of parabolics with maximal reduced subgroup. The results in the preceding Section allow us to complete the classification of parabolic subgroups having as reduced subgroup a maximal one. Let us recall that, by [Wen93], if the Dynkin diagram of G is simply laced or if $p > 3$, then such subgroups are of the form $P = G_m P^\alpha = (\ker F_G^m) P^\alpha$.

Proposition 3.1. *Let G be simple and P be a parabolic subgroup of G such that its reduced subgroup is maximal i.e. of the form $P_{\text{red}} = P^\alpha$ for some simple root α . Then there exists an isogeny φ with source G such that*

$$P = (\ker \varphi) P^\alpha,$$

unless G is of type G_2 over a field of characteristic $p = 2$ and α is the simple short root.

Proof. First, Propositions 2.9, 2.10, 2.20, 2.16 and Remarks 2.13 and 2.15 imply that if G is simple and P_{red} is a maximal reduced parabolic subgroup, then either P is reduced, or there exists a nontrivial noncentral normal subgroup of height one contained in P . This subgroup is either $H = N_G$ - when it is defined - or the image of the Frobenius kernel of the simply connected cover of G .

Now, let us consider the given parabolic P . If it is reduced, then there is nothing to prove. If it is nonreduced, then there is a noncentral subgroup $H_{(1)} \subset P$ normalized by G and of height one. Let us denote as

$$\varphi_1: G \longrightarrow G/H_{(1)} =: G_{(1)}$$

the quotient morphism and replace the pair (G, P) with $(G_{(1)}, P_{(1)})$, where $P_{(1)} := P/H_{(1)}$. This gives again a parabolic subgroup whose reduced subgroup is maximal, hence either $P_{(1)}$ is reduced or we can repeat the same reasoning to get an isogeny

$$\varphi_2: G \longrightarrow G/H_{(1)} \longrightarrow G/H_{(2)} =: G_{(2)}.$$

Setting $P_{(2)} := G/H_{(2)}$ we repeat the same reasoning again. This gives a sequence $(G_{(m)}, P_{(m)})$ which ends with a reduced parabolic subgroup in a finite number of steps : indeed, P/P_{red} is finite so it is not possible to have an infinite sequence

$$P_{\text{red}} \subsetneq H_{(1)} P_{\text{red}} \subsetneq \dots \subsetneq H_{(m)} P_{\text{red}} \subsetneq \dots \subsetneq P.$$

Thus, let us set $H := H_{(m)}$ for m big enough and $\varphi := \varphi_m$. Then we claim that $P = HP^\alpha = (\ker \varphi) P^\alpha$.

Both H and P^α are subgroups of P by construction, hence $HP^\alpha \subset P$. Quotienting by H then gives

$$HP^\alpha/H = P^\alpha/(H \cap P^\alpha) \subset P/H = P_{(m)}.$$

Since both are reduced and have the same underlying topological space, they must coincide hence $HP^\alpha = P$. \square

In particular, using our previous results on factorisation of isogenies, we can give a very explicit description of the kernels involved in the classification.

Corollary 3.2. *Keeping the above notation and the ones given in Definition 1.8, in the equality $P = (\ker \varphi)P^\alpha$, there are only the two following options:*

- (a) *either $\ker \varphi = \ker F_G^m = G_m$ is the Frobenius kernel,*
- (b) *or, when such a subgroup is defined, $\ker \varphi = \ker(\pi_{G^{(m)}} \circ F_G^m) = N_{m,G}$.*

Proof. Let us first assume G to be simply connected and consider the factorisation of the isogeny φ given by Proposition 1.12

$$\varphi: G \xrightarrow{\sigma} G'' \xrightarrow{\rho} G',$$

where $\sigma = \pi \circ F^m$ and ρ is central. Let α , α'' and α' be simple roots of G , G'' and G' respectively, defined by the equalities

$$P_{\text{red}} = P^\alpha, \quad \sigma(P^\alpha) = P^{\alpha''}, \quad \rho(P^{\alpha''}) = P^{\alpha'}.$$

Then

$$P = (\ker \rho \sigma)P^\alpha = (\rho \sigma)^{-1}(P^{\alpha'}) = \sigma^{-1}(P^{\alpha''}) = (\ker \sigma)P^\alpha,$$

hence replacing φ by σ and G' by G'' gives one of the cases (a) and (b).

If G is not simply connected, then we can consider the pull-back $\tilde{P} := \psi^{-1}(P) \subset \tilde{G}$ in the simply connected cover. Applying the above reasoning to \tilde{P} yields

$$\text{either } P = \psi(\tilde{P}) = \psi(\tilde{G}_m P^\alpha) = G_m P^\alpha, \quad \text{or } P = \psi(\tilde{P}) = \psi(N_{m,\tilde{G}} P^\alpha) = N_{m,G} P^\alpha$$

and we are done. \square

3.1.2. *Comparing varieties of Picard rank one.* Let us start by considering a homogeneous variety $X = G/P$ under the action of a simple adjoint group G , having Picard group of rank one. Then set

$$G_0 := \underline{\text{Aut}}_X^0 \quad \text{and} \quad P_0 := \text{Stab}(x) \subset G_0,$$

where $x \in X$ is a closed point and where we keep as notation for the automorphism group the same as in Remark 2.19. Since the radical of G_0 is solvable and acts on the projective variety X , it has a fixed point: being normal in G_0 , it is trivial. Analogously, the center of G_0 - which is contained in a maximal torus - is trivial. Moreover, the hypothesis $\text{Pic } X = \mathbf{Z}$ together with Theorem 3.12 imply that G_0 is simple. So the group G_0 is simple adjoint and uniquely determined by the variety X , while P_0 is a parabolic subgroup whose reduced subgroup is maximal. Its conjugacy class is uniquely determined by X up to an automorphism of the Dynkin diagram of G_0 . Moreover, since the action of G_0 on X is faithful, by Theorem 2.2 we have that P_0 is reduced, hence of the form $P_0 = P^\alpha$ for a simple root α .

Now, let us consider the action of G on X : we want to relate in all possible cases the pair (G, P) to the pair (G_0, P_0) . This will give us a way to determine, given two homogeneous spaces G/P and G'/P' , whether they are isomorphic as varieties.

Proposition 3.3. *If the pair (G_0, P_0) is not exceptional in the sense of Demazure, then one of the following two cases holds :*

- (a) *$G = G_0$ and $P = G_m P^\alpha$, where $P^\alpha = P_0$ up to an automorphism of the Dynkin diagram of G ,*
- (b) *$G = (\overline{G_0})_{\text{ad}}$ and $P = N_{m,G} P^\alpha$, where $P^\alpha = \pi_{G_0}(P_0)/Z(\overline{G_0})$ up to an automorphism of the Dynkin diagram of G .*

If (G_0, P_0) is exceptional, then there are two additional possibilities - denoting as (G'_0, P'_0) the associated pair in the sense of Demazure :

- (a') *$G = G'_0$ and $P = G_m P^\alpha$, where $P^\alpha = P'_0$ up to an automorphism of the Dynkin diagram of G ,*

(b') $G = (\overline{G}'_0)_{ad}$ and $P = N_{m,G}P^\alpha$, where $P^\alpha = \pi_{G'_0}(P'_0)/Z(\overline{G}'_0)$ up to an automorphism of the Dynkin diagram of G .

Proof. Let us start by assuming that (G_0, P_0) is not exceptional in the sense of Demazure. By Corollary 3.2, either $P = G_m P^\alpha$ or $P = N_{m,G} P^\alpha$ for some α . In the first case,

$$X = G/G_m P^\alpha = G^{(m)}/(P^\alpha)^{(m)} \simeq G/P^\alpha$$

as varieties, hence by Theorem 2.18 this implies $G = \underline{\text{Aut}}_X^0 = G_0$ and $P^\alpha = P^0$, leading to (a). In the second case,

$$X = G/N_{m,G} P^\alpha = \overline{G}^{(m)}/(\overline{P}^\alpha)^{(m)} \simeq \overline{G}/\overline{P}^\alpha = \overline{G}_{ad}/(\overline{P}^\alpha/Z(\overline{G}))$$

as varieties, hence by Theorem 2.18 again $\overline{G}_{ad} = \underline{\text{Aut}}_X^0 = G_0$ and $P_0 = \overline{P}^\alpha/Z(\overline{G})$. Considering their respective images by the very special isogeny of \overline{G}_{ad} gives (b).

If (G_0, P_0) is exceptional in the sense of Demazure, Theorem 2.18 allows for two additional cases: to get the conclusion it is enough to repeat the same reasoning by replacing (G_0, P_0) with (G'_0, P'_0) . \square

3.2. Curves and divisors on flag varieties. We give here an explicit basis for 1-cycles and divisors modulo numerical equivalence on a flag variety $X = G/P$ of any Picard rank, with stabilizer P not necessarily reduced. We do so by describing the cells of an appropriate Białynicki-Birula decomposition of X in terms of the root system of G and of the root system of a Levi subgroup of the reduced part of P .

3.2.1. Białynicki-Birula decomposition of a G -simple projective variety. Flag varieties are normal, projective and equipped with a G -action with a unique closed orbit, hence they form a particular class of simple G -projective varieties (for short, G -simple varieties), as in [Bri02]. Let us review here the main definitions and results concerning the Białynicki-Birula decomposition of such varieties, then specialize to flag varieties. The original work on the subject is [BB73]; for a scheme-theoretic statement see [Mil17, Theorem 13.47].

Let us consider a G -simple variety X and fix a cocharacter $\lambda: \mathbf{G}_m \rightarrow T$ such that

$$B = \{g \in G: \lim_{t \rightarrow 0} \lambda(t)g\lambda(t^{-1}) \text{ exists in } G\},$$

which is equivalent to the condition that $\langle \gamma, \lambda \rangle > 0$ for all $\gamma \in \Phi^+$. This implies in particular that the set of fixed points under the \mathbf{G}_m -action induced by λ coincides with the set X^T of T -fixed points. Recall that the fixed-point scheme X^T is smooth, see for example [Mil17, Theorem 13.1]. For any connected component $Y \subset X^T$ there are an associated *positive* and a *negative stratum*, defined as

$$X^+(Y) := \{x \in X: \lim_{t \rightarrow 0} \lambda(t) \cdot x \in Y\} \quad \text{and} \quad X^-(Y) := \{x \in X: \lim_{t \rightarrow 0} \lambda(t^{-1}) \cdot x \in Y\},$$

equipped with morphisms

$$\begin{aligned} p^+ : X^+(Y) &\rightarrow Y, & x &\mapsto \lim_{t \rightarrow 0} \lambda(t) \cdot x, \\ p^- : X^-(Y) &\rightarrow Y, & x &\mapsto \lim_{t \rightarrow 0} \lambda(t^{-1}) \cdot x. \end{aligned}$$

Theorem 3.4 (Białynicki-Birula decomposition). *Let X be a normal G -simple projective variety. Then the following hold:*

- The variety X is the disjoint union of the positive (resp. negative) strata as Y ranges over the connected components of X^T .
- The morphisms p^+ and p^- are affine bundles.

- The strata $X^+(Y)$ and $X^-(Y)$ intersect transversally along Y .

Let us remark that the assumption on λ implies that positive strata are B -invariant, while negative strata are B^- -invariant. In particular, the unique open positive stratum X^+ is equal to $X^+(x^+)$ where x^+ is the unique B^- -fixed point, and analogously the unique open negative stratum X^- is equal to $X^-(x^-)$ where x^- is the unique B -fixed point. Let us recall here the main results from [Bri02] in the case where X is smooth.

Theorem 3.5. *Let X be a smooth G -simple projective variety, x^- its B -fixed point, $X^- = X^-(x^-)$ the open negative cell and D_1, \dots, D_r the irreducible components of $X \setminus X^-$.*

- (1) D_1, \dots, D_r are globally generated Cartier divisors, whose linear equivalence classes form a basis of $\text{Pic}(X)$.
- (2) Every ample (resp. nef) divisor on X is linearly equivalent to a unique linear combination of D_1, \dots, D_r with positive (resp. non-negative) integer coefficients. In particular, rational and numerical equivalence coincide on X i.e. the natural map $\text{Pic}(X) \rightarrow N^1(X)$ is an isomorphism.
- (3) There is a unique T -fixed point x_i^- such that D_i is the closure of $X^-(x_i^-)$. Moreover, x_i^- is isolated.
- (4) Consider the B -invariant curve $C_i := \overline{B \cdot x_i^-}$. Then

$$D_i \cdot C_j = \delta_{ij},$$

meaning that C_j intersects transversally D_j and no other D_i .

- (5) The convex cone of curves $\text{NE}(X)$ is generated by the classes of C_1, \dots, C_r , which form a basis of the rational vector space $N_1(X)_{\mathbf{Q}}$.

3.2.2. *Białynicki-Birula decomposition of flag varieties.* Let us now specialize to our case i.e. interpret the results of the above Section in terms of root systems. The first step consists in recalling the Bruhat decomposition of a flag variety with reduced stabilizer, i.e. $X = G/P_I$ where $I \subset \Delta$ is a basis for the root system of a Levi subgroup of P_I . In particular, for a simple root α the subgroup P^α - which has been widely used in the previous Sections - coincides with $P_{\Delta \setminus \{\alpha\}}$. Let us fix a set of representatives $\dot{w} \in N_G(T)$, for $w \in W = W(G, T)$ and let us recall the following (see [Sp98, 8.3]).

Theorem 3.6 (Bruhat decomposition). *Let $G \supset B \supset T$ be a reductive group, a Borel subgroup and a maximal torus, and $W = W(G, T)$. Then the following hold.*

- (1) G is the disjoint union of the double cosets BwB , for $w \in W$.
- (2) Let Φ_w be the set of positive roots γ such that $w^{-1}\gamma$ is negative. Then

$$U_w := \prod_{\gamma \in \Phi_w} U_\gamma$$

is a subgroup of the unipotent radical of B , with the product being taken in any order.

- (3) The map $U_w \times B \rightarrow BwB$ given by $(u, b) \mapsto uwb$ is an isomorphism of varieties.

This gives a decomposition of G/B into the disjoint union of the cells BwB/B , which are isomorphic to U_w i.e. to affine spaces of dimension equal to the length of w . Since we want to work with G/P_I instead of G/B , we shall not consider the whole Weyl group but its quotient by the subgroup W_I generated by the reflections corresponding to simple roots in I .

Lemma 3.7. *In any left coset of W_I in W there is a unique element w characterized by the fact that $wI \subset \Phi^+$ or by the fact that the element w is of minimal length in wW_I .*

Proof. See [BT72, Proposition 3.9]. □

We denote the set of such representatives as W^I . In particular, denoting w_0 and $w_{0,I}$ the element of longest length of W and W_I respectively, then $w_0^I := w_0 w_{0,I}$ is the element of longest length in W^I .

Proposition 3.8 (Generalized Bruhat decomposition). *For a fixed $I \subset \Delta$, the group G is the disjoint union of the double cosets BwP_I , where w ranges over the set W^I .*

In order to get a similar statement as (3) in Theorem 3.6, let us consider for any $w \in W^I$ the sets

$$(3.1) \quad \Phi_w^I := \{\gamma \in \Phi^+ : w^{-1}\gamma \notin \Phi^+ \text{ and } w^{-1}\gamma \notin \Phi_I^+\},$$

$$(3.2) \quad \Phi_{w,I} := \Phi_w \setminus \Phi_w^I = \Phi_w \cap \Phi_I^+.$$

Lemma 3.9. *With the above notation, let us fix $w \in W^I$.*

- (1) *The groups U_γ , with γ ranging over Φ_w^I (resp. $\Phi_{w,I}$) generate two subgroups of the unipotent radical of B ,*

$$U_w^I = \prod_{\gamma \in \Phi_w^I} U_\gamma \quad \text{and} \quad U_{w,I} = \prod_{\gamma \in \Phi_{w,I}} U_\gamma,$$

with the product being taken in any order.

- (2) *The product map $U_w^I \times P_I \rightarrow BwP_I$ given by $(u, h) \mapsto uwh$ is an isomorphism of varieties.*

Proof. To prove (1), let us recall that for any pair of roots $\gamma, \delta \in \Phi$ there exist constants c_{ij} such that

$$(u_\gamma(x), u_\delta(y)) = \prod_{i,j>0, i\gamma+j\delta \in \Phi} u_{i\gamma+j\delta}(c_{ij}x^i y^j), \quad \text{for all } x, y \in \mathbf{G}_a$$

(see [Sp98, Proposition 8.2.3]). If γ and δ are both in Φ_w^I , then $w^{-1}(i\gamma + j\delta)$ is still negative and not belonging to Φ_I , hence by Equation (3.1) the product of the root subgroups with roots ranging over Φ_w^I is a group. The same reasoning holds for the second product.

Moving on to (2), let us consider an element $x \in BwP_I$. Let us fix an order on $\Phi_w^I = \{\gamma_1, \dots, \gamma_l\}$ and on $\Phi_{w,I} = \{\delta_1, \dots, \delta_m\}$. By Theorem 3.6, there are a unique $w' \in W_I$, a unique $u = u_{\gamma_1}(x_1) \dots u_{\gamma_l}(x_l) \in U_w^I$, a unique $u' = u_{\delta_1}(y_1) \dots u_{\delta_m}(y_m) \in U_{w,I}$ and a unique $b \in B$ such that $x = uu'\dot{w}'b \in Bw'w'B$. Moreover, by [Sp98, 8.1.12(2)], there exist constants $c_i \in k$ such that

$$u'\dot{w} = \left(\prod_{i=1}^m u_{\delta_i}(y_i) \right) \dot{w} = \dot{w} \left(\prod_{i=1}^m \dot{w}^{-1} u_{\delta_i}(y_i) \dot{w} \right) = \dot{w} \prod_{i=1}^m u_{w^{-1}\delta_i}(c_i y_i) =: \dot{w} u''$$

Since $w^{-1}\delta_i$ is in Φ_I for all i , the product u'' is an element of P_I , as well as $h := u''\dot{w}'b$ because $w' \in W_I$. This gives a unique way to write x as product uwh for some $u \in U_w^I$ and $h \in P_I$. \square

Next, let us go back to our original setting: consider a sequence $G \supset P \supset P_{\text{red}} = P_I \supset B \supset T$ and look at the map

$$\tilde{X} := G/P_I \xrightarrow{\sigma} G/P =: X,$$

in order to relate the geometry of X to that of \tilde{X} . The morphism σ is finite, purely inseparable and hence a homeomorphism between the underlying topological spaces. Let us denote as $\tilde{o} \in \tilde{X}$ and $o \in X$ the respective base points.

The decomposition of Proposition 3.8 allows us to express the variety \tilde{X} as the disjoint union of the cells $BwP_I/P_I = Bw\tilde{o}$ as $w \in W^I$. Let us remark that W^I corresponds to the set of isolated points under the T -action, i.e. that

$$(\tilde{X})^T = \{w\tilde{o} : w \in W/W_I\}$$

and the same holds for X . It is hence natural if such a decomposition coincides with the Białynicki-Birula decomposition of Theorem 3.4. This is useful because the advantage of the first one is that it is more explicit and easier to manipulate, while the second can be defined also on X , independently of the smoothness of the stabilizer. Let us denote as \tilde{X}_w^+ (resp. X_w^+) the positive Białynicki-Birula strata associated to the T -fixed point $w\tilde{o}$ (resp. wo), and the analogous notation for negative strata.

Lemma 3.10. *For any $w \in W/W_I$, we have*

$$Bw\tilde{o} = \tilde{X}_w^+ \quad \text{and} \quad Bwo = X_w^+.$$

Proof. For the first equality, $w\tilde{o}$ belongs to \tilde{X}_w^+ because it is a T -fixed point. Moreover, positive strata are B -invariant which means that $Bw\tilde{o} \subseteq \tilde{X}_w^+$. The other inclusion comes from the fact that \tilde{X} can be expressed as the disjoint union of both the strata of the two decompositions with the same index set.

Next, let us consider $Bwo = \sigma(Bw\tilde{o})$, which equals $\sigma(\tilde{X}_w^+)$ by what we just proved. The inclusion $\sigma(\tilde{X}_w^+) \subset X_w^+$ comes from the fact that σ being T -equivariant respects the Białynicki-Birula decomposition, while the other inclusion is due to the fact that

$$\bigsqcup_{w \in W^I} Bwo = X = \bigsqcup_{w \in W^I} X_w^+.$$

because σ is an homeomorphism. □

Remark 3.11. How can we visualize the morphism σ on cells? By Proposition 3.8, the Bruhat cell associated to $w \in W^I$ in \tilde{X} is an affine space of dimension l , equal to the cardinality of $\Phi_w^I = \{\gamma_1, \dots, \gamma_l\}$. Let us consider the integers n_i , which we recall are associated to the roots in Φ_w^I via the equality

$$U_{-\gamma_i} \cap P = u_{-\gamma_i}(\alpha_p^{n_i}).$$

If we denote as Y_i the coordinate on the affine line given by U_{γ_i} , then the morphism σ acts on such a line as an n_i -th iterated Frobenius morphism, hence its behavior on the cell $Bw\tilde{o} = \tilde{X}_w^+$ can be summarized in the following diagram

$$\begin{array}{ccc} U_w^I \simeq \tilde{X}_w^+ = \text{Spec } k[Y_1, \dots, Y_l] \simeq \mathbf{A}^l & \hookrightarrow & G/P_I \\ \downarrow \sigma & & \downarrow \sigma \\ X_w^+ = \text{Spec } k[Y_1^{p^{n_1}}, \dots, Y_l^{p^{n_l}}] \simeq \mathbf{A}^l & \hookrightarrow & G/P \end{array}$$

We reinterpret all the ingredients of Theorem 3.5 in order to specialize and state it in the case of flag varieties. First, $X = G/P$ is indeed smooth, projective and G -simple. Its unique B -fixed point is $x^- = o$ the base point, which gives as open cell $B^-o = Bw_0o = Bw_0^I o = X_{w_0^I}^+$. Moreover, the irreducible components of $X \setminus X_{w_0^I}$ are the closures of the strata of codimension one, i.e. the cells Bwo with $w \in W^I$ of length $l(w) = l(w_0^I) - 1$. Those are exactly of the form

$w = w_0 s_\alpha w_{0,I}$ for $\alpha \in \Delta \setminus I$, since for $\alpha \in I$ we have that $w_0 s_\alpha$ is in the same left coset as w_0^I . In particular, the divisors in the statement of Theorem 3.5 are

$$D_\alpha = \overline{B w_0 s_\alpha w_{0,I} o} = \overline{B w_0 s_\alpha o} = \overline{B^- s_\alpha o}, \quad \text{for } \alpha \in \Delta \setminus I,$$

hence the unique T -fixed point x_α^- such that D_α is the closure of $X^-(x_\alpha^-)$ is $x_\alpha^- = s_\alpha o$, and we are led to consider the B -invariant curves

$$C_\alpha = \overline{B x_\alpha^-} = \overline{B s_\alpha o}.$$

We are now able to reformulate the results of Section 3.2.1 in the following:

Theorem 3.12. *Let us consider a sequence $G \supset P \supset P_{\text{red}} = P_I \supset B \supset T$ and let $X = G/P$ with base point o and open cell $X^- = B^- o$. Then the following hold:*

- (1) *The irreducible components of $X \setminus X^-$ are the closures D_α of the negative cells associated to the points $s_\alpha o$ for $\alpha \in \Delta \setminus I$. Moreover, they are globally generated Cartier divisors, whose linear equivalence classes form a basis for $\text{Pic}(X)$.*
- (2) *Every ample (resp. nef) divisor on X is linearly equivalent to a unique linear combination of the D_α 's with positive (resp. non-negative) integer coefficients. In particular, the natural map $\text{Pic}(X) \rightarrow N^1(X)$ is an isomorphism.*
- (3) *Considering the B -invariant curves C_α 's defined above, the intersection numbers satisfy $D_\alpha \cdot C_\beta = \delta_{\alpha\beta}$.*
- (4) *The convex cone of curves $\text{NE}(X)$ is generated by the classes of the C_α 's, which form a basis of the rational vector space $N_1(X)_\mathbb{Q}$.*

3.2.3. *Contractions.* Theorem 3.12 tells us in particular that the Picard group of a flag variety $X = G/P$ is a free \mathbf{Z} -module of rank the number of simple roots not belonging to the root system of a Levi factor of P_{red} . This gives a motivation to the study, done in Section 2, of parabolic subgroups having maximal reduced part. In order to move on to higher ranks by exploiting the previous results in rank one, we adopt the following strategy : we define a finite collection of morphisms which behave nicely, arise naturally from the variety X , and whose targets are homogeneous spaces of Picard rank one. As a first step towards such a construction, we recall the notion of a contraction between varieties and some of its properties.

Definition 3.13. Let X and Y be varieties over an algebraically closed field k . A *contraction* between them is a proper morphism $f: X \rightarrow Y$ such that $f^\#: \mathcal{O}_Y \rightarrow f_* \mathcal{O}_X$ is an isomorphism.

We will make use of the following results (stated here for reference).

Theorem 3.14. *Let $f: X \rightarrow Y$ be a contraction between projective varieties over k . Then f is uniquely determined, up to isomorphism, by the convex subcone $\text{NE}(f)$ of $\text{NE}(X)$ generated by the classes of curves which it contracts. Moreover, if Y' is a third projective variety and $f': X \rightarrow Y'$ satisfies $\text{NE}(f) \subset \text{NE}(f')$, then there is a unique morphism $\psi: Y \rightarrow Y'$ such that $f' = \psi \circ f$.*

$$\begin{array}{ccc} X & \xrightarrow{f} & Y \\ & \searrow f' & \swarrow \psi \\ & & Y' \end{array}$$

Proof. See [Deb01, Proposition 1.14]. □

Theorem 3.15 (Blanchard's Lemma). *Let $f: X \rightarrow Y$ be a contraction between projective varieties over k . Assume that X is equipped with an action of a connected algebraic group G . Then there exists a unique G -action on Y such that the morphism f is G -equivariant.*

Proof. See [Bri17, 7.2]. \square

The following construction is done here for any globally generated line bundle and is then applied to $\mathcal{O}_X(D_\alpha)$ to define the desired family of contractions.

Lemma 3.16. *Let X be a projective variety over k and \mathcal{L} a line bundle over X which is generated by its global sections. Then*

(a) *There is a well-defined contraction*

$$f: X \longrightarrow Y := \text{Proj} \bigoplus_{n=0}^{\infty} H^0(X, \mathcal{L}^{\otimes n}).$$

(b) *A curve C in X is contracted by f if and only if $\mathcal{L} \cdot C = 0$.*

Proof. (a) : Let us denote as S the graded ring on the right hand side and denote as $S_d = H^0(X, \mathcal{L}^{\otimes d})$ its homogeneous part of degree d . The schemes X and $Y = \text{Proj } S$ are covered by the open subset

$$D(t) = \text{Spec} \left(\bigcup_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{H^0(X, \mathcal{L}^{\otimes n})}{t^n} \right) \quad \text{and} \quad X_t := \{x \in X, t_x \notin \mathfrak{m}_x \mathcal{L}_x\} = X \setminus Z(t),$$

for t homogeneous in $\bigoplus_{d \geq 1} S_d$, because by hypothesis \mathcal{L} is globally generated. This allows to define f via the inclusion

$$(3.3) \quad \bigcup_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{H^0(X, \mathcal{L}^{\otimes nd})}{t^n} \subset \mathcal{O}_X(X_t), \quad \text{for } t \in S_d.$$

Moreover, [Har77, II, Lemma 5.14] - applied to the coherent sheaf \mathcal{O}_X and the line bundle $\mathcal{L}^{\otimes nd}$ - implies that (3.3) is an equality, which gives the condition $f_* \mathcal{O}_X \simeq \mathcal{O}_Y$.

(b) : Let us consider the sheaf $\mathcal{O}_Y(1)$ defined as in [Har77, II, Proposition 5.11], fix some global section $s \in H^0(X, \mathcal{L})$ and assume the open set on which it does not vanish is affine i.e. $X_s = \text{Spec } \mathcal{O}_X(X_s)$. Recall that we have the trivialization $\mathcal{L}|_{X_s} \simeq s \mathcal{O}_{X_s}$, so considering sections over X_s gives

$$H^0(X_s, f^* \mathcal{O}_Y(1)) = \left(\bigcup_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{S_{n+1}}{s^n} \right) \otimes_{\bigcup_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{S_n}{s^n}} \mathcal{O}_X(X_s) = \frac{s^{n+1} \mathcal{O}_X(X_s)}{s^n} = H^0(X_s, \mathcal{L}).$$

By covering X with the open sets X_s as s ranges over the global sections, this gives the condition $f^* \mathcal{O}_Y(1) = \mathcal{L}$, hence

$$\begin{aligned} H^0(X, \mathcal{L}) &= H^0(X, f^* \mathcal{O}_Y(1)) = H^0(Y, f_* f^* \mathcal{O}_Y(1)) = H^0(Y, \mathcal{O}_Y(1) \otimes_{\mathcal{O}_Y} f_* \mathcal{O}_X) \\ &= H^0(Y, \mathcal{O}_Y(1)), \end{aligned}$$

where the last equality comes from f being a contraction. In particular, $\mathcal{O}_Y(1)$ is ample over Y , thus it must have strictly positive intersection with any effective 1-cycle by Kleinman's criterion. In other words, given a nonzero class $C \in \text{NE}(X)$, $f_* C = 0$ if and only if

$$0 = \mathcal{O}_Y(1) \cdot f_* C = f^* \mathcal{O}_Y(1) \cdot C = \mathcal{L} \cdot C,$$

by the projection formula, and we are done. \square

Before going back to our particular case, let us prove a criterion for a morphism between homogeneous spaces to be a contraction.

Lemma 3.17. *Consider a chain of algebraic groups $H \subset H' \subset G$ over k . The morphism $f: G/H \longrightarrow G/H'$ is a contraction if and only if H'/H is proper over k and $\mathcal{O}(H'/H) = k$.*

Proof. Let us consider $q: G \rightarrow G/H$ and $q': G \rightarrow G/H'$ to be the quotient maps and $m: G \times H/H' \rightarrow G/H$ the morphism given by the group multiplication and then by quotienting by H : by [Mil17, Proposition 7.15] we have a cartesian square

$$\begin{array}{ccc} G \times H'/H & \xrightarrow{pr_G} & G \\ \downarrow m & & \downarrow q' \\ G/H & \xrightarrow{f} & G/H' \end{array}$$

Since q' is faithfully flat and pr_G is obtained as base change of f via such a morphism, f being proper is equivalent to pr_G being proper; now, the latter is obtained as base change of $H'/H \rightarrow \text{Spec } k$ via the structural morphism of G , which is also fppf, hence it is proper if and only if H'/H is proper over k . This shows the first condition.

Moreover, the formation of the direct image of sheaves also commutes with fppf extensions: more precisely, applying this to the structural sheaves in our case yields

$$(q')^* f_* \mathcal{O}_{G/H} = (pr_G)_* \mathcal{O}_{G \times H'/H} = \mathcal{O}_G \otimes \mathcal{O}_{H'/H}(H'/H),$$

hence by taking q'_* on both sides one gets

$$f_* \mathcal{O}_{G/H} = \mathcal{O}_{G/H'} \iff \mathcal{O}_{H'/H}(H'/H) = k,$$

which gives the second condition. \square

Remark 3.18. Let us consider again a fixed parabolic subgroup P . We now construct a collection of morphisms $f_\alpha: X \rightarrow G/Q_\alpha$, for $\alpha \in \Delta \setminus I$, such that

- (1) the target G/Q_α is defined in a concrete geometrical way,
- (2) each f_α is a contraction,
- (3) the stabilizer Q_α coincides with the smallest subgroup scheme of G containing both P and P^α : in particular, $(Q_\alpha)_{\text{red}}$ is a maximal reduced parabolic subgroup,
- (4) the collection $(f_\alpha)_{\alpha \in \Delta \setminus I}$ "tells us a lot" about the variety X .

The reason why Q_α is not directly defined as being the algebraic subgroup generated by P and P^α is that this notion does not behave well since P is nonreduced in general.

Let us apply Lemma 3.16 to the variety $X = G/P$ and the line bundle $\mathcal{L} = \mathcal{O}_X(D_\alpha)$, which can be done thanks to Theorem 3.12. This gives a contraction

$$(3.4) \quad f_\alpha: X \longrightarrow Y_\alpha := \text{Proj} \bigoplus_{n=0}^{\infty} H^0(X, \mathcal{O}_X(nD_\alpha)).$$

By Theorem 3.15, there is a unique G -action on Y_α such that f_α is equivariant. Moreover, since f_α is a dominant morphism between projective varieties, it is surjective, hence the target must be of the form $Y_\alpha = G/Q_\alpha$ for some subgroup scheme $P \subseteq Q_\alpha \subsetneq G$. We take this construction as the definition of the subgroup Q_α , so that conditions (1) and (2) are already satisfied. Moreover, by Theorem 3.12 and Lemma 3.16, a curve C is contracted by f_α if and only if $D_\alpha \cdot C = 0$, meaning that this map contracts all C_β for $\beta \neq \alpha$ while it restricts to a finite morphism on C_α . This leaves one more condition to show.

Lemma 3.19. *The smallest subgroup scheme of G containing both P and P^α is Q_α .*

Proof. By definition of Y_α we have the inclusion $P \subset Q_\alpha$.

Let H be the subgroup scheme of G generated by P and P^α . Since

$$P_{\text{red}} = P_I = \bigcap_{\alpha \in \Delta \setminus I} P^\alpha,$$

the subgroup generated by P_{red} and P^α is just P^α . Next, consider the quotient map $\tilde{\pi}: \tilde{X} \rightarrow G/P^\alpha$ and the composition $f_\alpha \circ \sigma: \tilde{X} \rightarrow G/Q_\alpha$: the latter contracts, by the above discussions, all curves \tilde{C}_β for $\beta \neq \alpha$, hence $\text{NE}(\tilde{\pi}) \subset \text{NE}(f_\alpha \circ \sigma)$. Moreover, $\tilde{\pi}$ is a contraction by Lemma 3.17, because its fiber at the base point is P^α/P_I which is proper and has no nonconstant global regular functions. By Theorem 3.14, there exists a unique morphism φ making the diagram

$$\begin{array}{ccc} \tilde{X} = G/P_{\text{red}} & \xrightarrow{\tilde{\pi}} & G/P^\alpha \\ \downarrow \sigma & & \downarrow \varphi \\ X = G/P & \xrightarrow{f_\alpha} & G/Q_\alpha \end{array}$$

commute: this shows $P^\alpha \subset Q_\alpha$ hence $H \subset Q_\alpha$.

Conversely, let us consider the projection $\pi: X \rightarrow G/H$. We already know by Theorem 3.12 that $\tilde{\pi}$ contracts all \tilde{C}_β for $\beta \neq \alpha$; moreover, the square on the left in the following diagram is commutative and its horizontal arrows are both homeomorphisms. This implies that π contracts all C_β for $\beta \neq \alpha$. In other words, the inclusion $\text{NE}(f_\alpha) \subset \text{NE}(\pi)$ holds.

$$\begin{array}{ccccc} \tilde{X} & \xrightarrow{\sigma} & X & \xrightarrow{f_\alpha} & G/Q_\alpha \\ \downarrow \tilde{\pi} & & \downarrow \pi & \swarrow \psi & \\ G/P^\alpha & \xrightarrow{\quad} & G/H & & \end{array}$$

Since f_α is a contraction by definition, this gives a factorisation by ψ - again by Theorem 3.14 - which means that $Q_\alpha \subset H$. \square

Remark 3.20. The homogeneous space X is now equipped with a finite number of contractions f_α such that the target of each morphism has Picard group \mathbf{Z} , with a unique canonical ample generator, corresponding to the image of D_α . The inclusion

$$(3.5) \quad P \subseteq \bigcap_{\alpha \in \Delta} Q_\alpha$$

holds by definition of Q_α . If the characteristic is $p \geq 5$, by [Wen93] there are nonnegative integers m_α for $\alpha \in \Delta \setminus I$ such that P is the intersection of the $G_{m_\alpha} P^\alpha$, hence $P \subset Q_\alpha \subset G_{m_\alpha} P^\alpha$ and the inclusion (3.5) becomes an equality. Geometrically, this corresponds to saying that the product map

$$f := \prod_{\alpha \in \Delta} f_\alpha: X \longrightarrow \prod_{\alpha \in \Delta} G/Q_\alpha$$

is a closed immersion, realizing X as the unique closed orbit of the G -action on the target.

3.3. Examples in Picard rank two. Let us consider a simple simply connected algebraic group G over k , having Dynkin diagram with an edge of multiplicity equal to the characteristic $p \in \{2, 3\}$, so that the definitions and properties of Subsection 1.2.2 apply. In what follows, we call a parabolic subgroup *of standard type* if it is of the form $G_{m_1} P^{\alpha_1} \cap \dots \cap G_{m_r} P^{\alpha_r}$ for some integers m_i and simple roots α_i , while a homogeneous space is said to be *of standard type* its underlying variety is isomorphic to some G'/P' , where P' is a parabolic subgroup of standard type.

The main result in this part is the following, which provides us with a first family of homogeneous projective varieties (in types B_n , C_n and F_4) which are not of standard type.

Proposition 3.21. *Let $p = 2$ and consider a simple, simply connected group G and two distinct simple roots α and β such that: either G is of type B_n or C_n and the pair (α, β) is of*

the form (α_j, α_i) with $i < j < n$ or $j = n$ and $i < n - 1$, or G is of type F_4 and the pair (α, β) is one among

$$(\alpha_1, \alpha_4), \quad (\alpha_2, \alpha_1), \quad (\alpha_2, \alpha_4), \quad (\alpha_3, \alpha_1), \quad (\alpha_3, \alpha_4), \quad (\alpha_4, \alpha_1).$$

Then the homogeneous space $X = G/(N_{r,G}P^\alpha \cap P^\beta)$ is not of standard type.

First, we give a motivation to the fact that we look for an example in rank two, then we prove Proposition 3.21 in two consecutive steps.

Let us fix a simple root $\alpha \in \Delta$. In order to find a parabolic subgroup not of standard type, the easiest and more natural idea is to consider the very special isogeny $\pi_G: G \rightarrow \overline{G}$ and the subgroup $P := N_G P^\alpha$. Its reduced part $P_{\text{red}} = P^\alpha$ is maximal, but P is not of the form $G_m P^\alpha$ for any m . Indeed, its associated function $\varphi_P: \Phi^+ \rightarrow \mathbf{N} \cup \{\infty\}$ is given by

$$\begin{aligned} \gamma &\longmapsto \infty && \text{if } \alpha \notin \text{Supp}(\gamma) \\ \gamma &\longmapsto 0 && \text{if } \alpha \in \text{Supp}(\gamma) \text{ and } \gamma \in \Phi_{>} \\ \gamma &\longmapsto 1 && \text{if } \alpha \in \text{Supp}(\gamma) \text{ and } \gamma \in \Phi_{<} \end{aligned}$$

while the function associated to a parabolic subgroup of standard type satisfies $\varphi_{G_m P^\alpha}(\gamma) = m$ for all roots γ containing α in their support, regardless of their length. There always exist both a short and a long root containing any simple root α in their support, namely

$$(3.6) \quad \bullet \text{ in type } B_n, \text{Supp}(\varepsilon_1) = \text{Supp}(\varepsilon_1 + \varepsilon_2) = \Delta;$$

$$(3.7) \quad \bullet \text{ in type } C_n, \text{Supp}(2\varepsilon_1) = \text{Supp}(\varepsilon_1 + \varepsilon_2) = \Delta;$$

$$(3.8) \quad \bullet \text{ in type } F_4, \text{Supp}(\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 3\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4) = \text{Supp}(\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2 + 4\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4) = \Delta;$$

$$(3.9) \quad \bullet \text{ in type } G_2, \text{Supp}(2\alpha_1 + \alpha_2) = \text{Supp}(3\alpha_1 + 2\alpha_2) = \Delta.$$

Let us remark that the above roots can be constructed in a uniform way: they are respectively the highest short root and the highest (long) root. Thus, we can conclude that $\varphi_P \neq \varphi_{G_m Q}$ for all m , proving that P is a parabolic subgroup not of standard type. However, $X = G/P$ is isomorphic as a variety to $\overline{G}/P_{\overline{\alpha}}$, hence the homogeneous space X is still of standard type.

The same reasoning applies when one considers the product of a parabolic subgroup of standard type and of a kernel of a noncentral isogeny with source G : this might define a new parabolic subgroup, but an homogeneous space which is still of standard type. Together with Proposition 3.1, this implies that it is not possible to find examples of homogeneous spaces not of standard type having Picard rank one, when the characteristic satisfies the edge hypothesis (see Section 1.2.2). This provides a motivation to the study of the rank two case, which means considering parabolic subgroups whose reduced part is of the form $P^\alpha \cap P^\beta$ for two distinct simple roots α and β . In such a context we are able to find the desired class of examples.

Lemma 3.22. *Let us consider a simple, simply connected group G having Dynkin diagram with an edge of multiplicity p , fix two distinct simple roots α and β and an integer $r \geq 0$. Both the parabolic*

$$P := N_{r,G}P^\alpha \cap P^\beta$$

and its pull-back via the very special isogeny $\pi_{\overline{G}}: \overline{G} \rightarrow G$ are not of standard type if and only if one of the following conditions is satisfied :

(i) G is of type B_n or C_n and the pair (α, β) is of the form (α_j, α_i) with $i < j < n$ or $j = n$ and $i < n - 1$;

(ii) G is of type F_4 and the pair (α, β) is one amongst

$$(\alpha_1, \alpha_4), \quad (\alpha_2, \alpha_1), \quad (\alpha_2, \alpha_4), \quad (\alpha_3, \alpha_1), \quad (\alpha_3, \alpha_4), \quad (\alpha_4, \alpha_1).$$

In particular, this situation can only happen when $p = 2$.

Proof. Let us take a look at the function $\varphi_P: \Phi^+ \rightarrow \mathbf{N} \cup \{\infty\}$ associated to the parabolic P - recall that it is determined by the equality

$$U_{-\gamma} \cap P = u_{-\gamma}(\alpha_{p\varphi(\gamma)}), \quad \gamma \in \Phi^+$$

- and let us compare it to the one associated to some $Q = G_m P^\alpha \cap G_n P^\beta$ (i.e. a parabolic of standard type), which is necessarily of this form because $Q_{\text{red}} = P_{\text{red}} = P^\alpha \cap P^\beta$. Our aim is to find in which cases there is a contradiction with the equality $P = Q$. First of all, assuming $\varphi_P(\beta) = \varphi_Q(\beta)$ leads to $n = 0$. Now, let us write down the values that φ_P and φ_Q assume on all positive roots in the following table.

	$\alpha, \beta \in \text{Supp}(\gamma)$	$\alpha \in \text{Supp}(\gamma),$ $\beta \notin \text{Supp}(\gamma), \gamma$ short	$\alpha \in \text{Supp}(\gamma),$ $\beta \notin \text{Supp}(\gamma), \gamma$ long	$\beta \in \text{Supp}(\gamma)$
$\varphi_Q(\gamma)$	∞	m	m	0
$\varphi_P(\gamma)$	∞	$r + 1$	r	0

Thus, the two functions can never coincide if and only if there exist at least one long root and one short root containing α and not β in their respective supports. Let us examine each root system to determine when this is the case.

- If G is of type G_2 in characteristic $p = 3$, then all roots distinct from α_1 and α_2 contain both simple roots in their support, hence the desired condition is never satisfied. Thus from now on we can assume that $p = 2$.
- If G is of type B_n , let $\alpha = \alpha_j$ and $\beta = \alpha_i$ for some $1 \leq i, j \leq n$. A positive short root is of the form $\varepsilon_m = \alpha_m + \dots + \alpha_{n-1} + 2\alpha_n$ for $m < n$ or $\varepsilon_n = \alpha_n$: hence if $j < i$ then a short root containing α in its support also contains β . Let us then assume $i < j$: in this case $\gamma = \varepsilon_j$ satisfies the condition. Moving on to long roots, if $i < j < n$ then $\gamma = \alpha = \varepsilon_j - \varepsilon_{j+1}$ is as wanted, while if $j = n$ then $\gamma = \varepsilon_{n-1} + \varepsilon_n = \alpha_n + 2\alpha_{n-1}$ satisfies the condition when $i < n - 1$, while if $i = n - 1$ then there is no such γ .
- If G is of type C_n , let $\alpha = \alpha_j$ and $\beta = \alpha_i$ for some $1 \leq i, j \leq n$. A positive long root is of the form $2\varepsilon_m = 2(\alpha_m + \dots + \alpha_{n-1} + \alpha_n)$ for $m < n$ or $2\varepsilon_n = \alpha_n$: hence if $j < i$ then a long root containing α in its support also contains β . Let us then assume $i < j$: in this case $\gamma = 2\varepsilon_j$ satisfies the condition. Moving on to short roots, if $i < j < n$ then $\gamma = \alpha = \varepsilon_j - \varepsilon_{j+1}$ is as wanted, while if $j = n$ then $\gamma = \varepsilon_{n-1} + \varepsilon_n = \alpha_n + \alpha_{n-1}$ satisfies the condition when $i < n - 1$, while if $i = n - 1$ then there is no such γ . This completes condition (i).
- If G is of type F_4 , there is no short root containing α_1 (resp. α_1 , resp. α_2) in its support and not containing α_2 (resp. α_3 , resp. α_3); moreover, there is no long root containing α_3 (resp. α_4 , resp. α_4) in its support and not containing α_2 (resp. α_2 , resp. α_3). This can be seen by directly looking at the list of positive roots in such a system, recalled at the beginning of Subsection 2.5. The remaining pairs are listed below, which gives condition (ii).

α	β	a short $\gamma: \alpha \in \text{Supp}(\gamma), \beta \notin \text{Supp}(\gamma)$	a long $\gamma: \alpha \in \text{Supp}(\gamma), \beta \notin \text{Supp}(\gamma)$
α_1	α_4	$\alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \alpha_3$	α_1
α_2	α_1	$\alpha_2 + \alpha_3$	α_2
α_2	α_4	$\alpha_2 + \alpha_3$	α_2
α_3	α_1	α_3	$\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3$
α_3	α_4	α_3	$\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3$
α_4	α_1	α_4	$\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_3 + 2\alpha_4$

Up to this point we have only shown that the parabolic P is not of standard type if and only if conditions (i) or (ii) are satisfied. Now, let us consider the pull-back

$$\pi_{\overline{G}}^{-1}(P) = \pi_{\overline{G}}^{-1}(N_{r,G}P^\alpha \cap P^\beta) = \overline{G}_{r+1}P^{\overline{\alpha}} \cap N_{\overline{G}}P^{\overline{\beta}}$$

and compare it with $Q = \overline{G}_mP^{\overline{\alpha}} \cap \overline{G}_nP^{\overline{\beta}}$, analogously as before. This gives in particular, considering a root $\gamma \in \Phi^+$ satisfying $\overline{\alpha}, \overline{\beta} \in \text{Supp}(\gamma)$, that $\varphi_Q(\gamma) = \min(m, n)$ for all γ , while $\varphi_{\pi^{-1}(P)}(\gamma)$ is equal to 1 if γ is short, and equal to 0 if γ is long. To show that those two parabolics can never coincide it is enough to have both such a long and a short root. This is always the case, as recalled at the beginning of this Subsection in (3.6)- (3.8), hence this concludes the proof. \square

Lemma 3.23. *Keeping the above notations, consider two distinct simple positive roots α and β satisfying one of the conditions of Lemma 3.22. Then the parabolic $P := N_{r,G}P^\alpha \cap P^\beta$ gives a variety $X := G/P$ which is not of standard type.*

Proof. The reduced part of the parabolic subgroup P is $P_{\text{red}} = P^\alpha \cap P^\beta$: by Theorem 3.12, the convex cone of curves of the variety X is generated by the classes of the curves

$$C_\alpha = \overline{Bs_\alpha o} \quad \text{and} \quad C_\beta = \overline{Bs_\beta o}.$$

Next, let us consider the two contractions

$$f_\alpha: X \longrightarrow G/Q_\alpha \quad \text{and} \quad f_\beta: X \longrightarrow G/Q_\beta$$

defined by (3.4). Clearly, $Q_\beta = \langle Q, P^\beta \rangle = P^\beta$ is smooth because $P \subset P^\beta$. On the other hand, let us show that $Q_\alpha = N_{r,G}P^\alpha$. Since both P and P^α are subgroups of the right hand term, the inclusion $Q_\alpha \subset N_{r,G}P^\alpha$ holds. To prove the other inclusion, let us notice that the hypothesis on α and β , as shown in the proof of Lemma 3.22, guarantees the existence of some short positive root γ containing α and not β in its support. In particular, this implies that

$$P \cap U_{-\gamma} = (N_{r,G}P^\alpha \cap U_{-\gamma}) \cap (P^\beta \cap U_{-\gamma}) = u_{-\gamma}(\alpha_{p^{r+1}}),$$

hence $Q_\alpha \cap U_{-\gamma}$ is the image of a Frobenius kernel of height at least equal to $r + 1$. By the factorisation of isogenies in Proposition 1.12, the only two possibilities are thus $Q_\alpha = G_{r+1}P^\alpha$ and $Q_\alpha = N_{r,G}P^\alpha$, which allows to conclude that $Q_\alpha = N_{r,G}P^\alpha$. This means that the product of the contractions

$$f = f_\alpha \times f_\beta: X \hookrightarrow X_\alpha \times X_\beta$$

is a closed immersion, where X_α (resp. X_β) is the underlying variety of G/N_GP^α (resp. G/P^β). Moreover, these maps are - up to a permutation - uniquely determined by the variety X , because the monoid $\mathbf{NC}_\alpha \oplus \mathbf{NC}_\beta \subset N_1(X)$ of effective 1-cycles does not depend on the group action on it: the two contractions are uniquely determined by its two generators and by the fact that the first is a nonsmooth morphism while the second is smooth.

The following step consists in studying the automorphisms of the varieties X and X_β . First, we can apply Theorem 2.18 to the variety $X_\beta = G/P^\beta$ since its stabilizer is smooth and since by Lemma 3.22 the pair $(G_{\text{ad}}, P^\beta/Z(G))$ is not associated to any of the exceptional pairs, except in the case of $G = \text{Sp}_{2n}$ and $(\alpha, \beta) = (\alpha_j, \alpha_1)$, which we treat later. This implies

$$\underline{\text{Aut}}_{X_\beta}^0 = G_{\text{ad}}.$$

Next, let us consider the group $\underline{\text{Aut}}_X^0$: its natural action on X gives, applying Theorem 3.15 to the contraction $f_\beta: X \longrightarrow X_\beta$, an action on X_β i.e. a morphism

$$\underline{\text{Aut}}_X^0 \xrightarrow{\xi} \underline{\text{Aut}}_{X_\beta}^0 = G_{\text{ad}}.$$

In particular, the isogeny ξ is a section of the natural morphism given by the action of G_{ad} on X , thus giving a semidirect product $\underline{\text{Aut}}_X^0 = G_{\text{ad}} \rtimes \ker \xi$. Since $\underline{\text{Aut}}_X^0$ is reduced, $\ker \xi$ must be finite, smooth and connected, so it is trivial and we conclude that $\underline{\text{Aut}}_X^0 = G_{\text{ad}}$.

Finally, let us consider another action of a semisimple, simply connected G' onto the variety X ; realizing it as a quotient G'/P' for some parabolic subgroup P' . Since it is simply connected, G' is either simple or the direct product $G_{(1)} \times \cdots \times G_{(l)}$ where each $G_{(i)}$ is simple.

• If G' is simple, then its action on X induces a morphism $G' \rightarrow \underline{\text{Aut}}_X^0 = G_{\text{ad}}$, which is in particular an isogeny. By Proposition 1.12, this morphism can be factorised as

$$G' \xrightarrow{F^m} G \twoheadrightarrow \underline{\text{Aut}}_X^0 \quad \text{or} \quad G' \xrightarrow{F^m \circ \pi} G \twoheadrightarrow \underline{\text{Aut}}_X^0,$$

where the second possibility only can happen whenever G satisfies the edge hypothesis. The stabilizer of the G' -action is the preimage of the stabilizer of the G -action via such an isogeny, hence it is either of the form $G_m P$ for some m or of the form $\overline{G}_m \pi^{-1}(P)$. Now, a parabolic Q is of standard type if and only if $G_m Q$ is for any integer m , since the associated functions satisfy $\varphi_Q(\gamma) + m = \varphi_{G_m Q}(\gamma)$. This means that P' is of standard type if and only if P (resp. $\pi^{-1}(P)$) is. This remark, together with Lemma 3.22 allows us to conclude that, due to our choice of roots α and β , P' is still a parabolic subgroup not of standard type.

If $G = \text{Sp}_{2n}$ and $P^\beta = P^{\alpha_1}$, then Theorem 2.18 yields $\underline{\text{Aut}}_{X_\beta}^0 = \text{PGL}_{2n}$. Repeating the above reasoning implies that $\underline{\text{Aut}}_X^0 = \text{PGL}_{2n}$ as well, hence the isogeny with source G' is necessarily the composition of an iterated Frobenius and a central isogeny. This implies that the stabilizer of the G' -action is of the form $P' = G_m P$ hence still not of standard type.

• If $G' = G_{(1)} \times \cdots \times G_{(l)}$ is not simple, consider the morphism

$$G_{(1)} \times \cdots \times G_{(l)} \xrightarrow{\phi} G \twoheadrightarrow G_{\text{ad}}$$

determined by the action: then $H := \ker \phi$ is a normal subgroup of G' and the image of ϕ is simple, thus H is necessarily of the form

$$H = \prod_{i \neq i_0} G_{(i)} \times K, \quad \text{for some } K \subset Z(G_{(i_0)}),$$

thus K is trivial because the quotient G is also simply connected. In particular, denoting as $P_{(i_0)} := P' \cap G_{(i_0)}$, we have

$$X = G'/P' = G' / \left(\prod_{i \neq i_0} G_{(i)} \times P_{(i_0)} \right) = G_{(i_0)} / P_{(i_0)}$$

Applying the reasoning above to $G_{(i_0)}$ instead of G' leads to the conclusion that the associated function of $P_{(i_0)}$ is not of standard type, hence the same is true for the stabilizer $P' = \prod_{i \neq i_0} G_{(i)} \times P_{(i_0)}$. \square

Notice that, except for the group of type G_2 in characteristic 2, Lemma 3.23 covers the classification of all homogeneous spaces of Picard rank two that "we know the existence of" i.e. those of the form G/P with $P = (\ker \varphi)P^\alpha \cap (\ker \psi)P^\beta$ for a couple of isogenies φ and ψ with source G .

Indeed, Proposition 1.12 implies that one of the two kernels must be contained in the other, hence up to permuting α and β the inclusion $\ker \psi \subset \ker \varphi$ holds. Taking the quotient by $\ker \psi$ allows to assume either $P = G_r P^\alpha \cap P^\beta$, which is the standard type case, or $P = N_{r,G} P^\alpha \cap P^\beta$ for some $r \geq 0$. The latter gives a variety not of standard type if and only if $p = 2$ and the above hypothesis on roots is satisfied.

Problem: Let us consider a simple group and a parabolic subgroup $P \subset G$ with reduced part $P_{\text{red}} = P_I$ which is not maximal. The associated family of contractions give a natural inclusion

$$P \subset \bigcap_{\alpha \in \Delta \setminus I} Q_\alpha.$$

The question whether there exist a parabolic subgroup P for which the inclusion is strict is still open. At this point, we are neither able to exclude their existence nor to exhibit an explicit example.

4. APPENDIX

Let us resume here a short description of the Chevalley embedding of the group of type G_2 , which holds in any characteristic. We will then specialize to characteristic two which is the interesting one for our purposes. First we describe its action on the algebra of octonions, then we use it to compute some of the root subgroups of such a group, which are fundamental in order to study the parabolic subgroups $P_{\mathfrak{h}}$ and $P_{\mathfrak{l}}$ (see Definition 2.25).

4.1. The Chevalley embedding of G_2 . Let G be the simple group of type G_2 in characteristic $p > 0$. It can be viewed - as illustrated in [SV00], from which we will keep most of the notation - as the automorphism group of an octonion algebra. The latter is the algebra

$$\mathbb{O} = \{(u, v) : u, v \text{ are } 2 \times 2 \text{ matrices}\},$$

with basis

$$\begin{aligned} e_{11} &= \left(\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \right), & e_{12} &= \left(\begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \right), \\ e_{21} &= \left(\begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \right), & e_{22} &= \left(\begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \right), \\ f_{11} &= \left(\begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \right), & f_{12} &= \left(\begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \right), \\ f_{21} &= \left(\begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \right), & f_{22} &= \left(\begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \right), \end{aligned}$$

unit $e = (1, 0) = e_{11} + e_{22}$, and which is equipped with a norm

$$q(u, v) = \det(u) - \det(v).$$

Let us write here for reference a table of products of the basis vectors :

\backslash	e_{11}	e_{21}	e_{12}	e_{22}	f_{11}	f_{21}	f_{12}	f_{22}
e_{11}	e_{11}	0	e_{12}	0	f_{11}	f_{21}	0	0
e_{21}	e_{21}	0	e_{22}	0	0	0	f_{11}	f_{21}
e_{12}	0	e_{11}	0	e_{12}	f_{12}	f_{22}	0	0
e_{22}	0	e_{21}	0	e_{22}	0	0	f_{12}	f_{22}
f_{11}	0	0	$-f_{12}$	f_{11}	0	$-e_{21}$	0	e_{11}
f_{21}	0	0	$-f_{22}$	f_{21}	e_{21}	0	$-e_{11}$	0
f_{12}	f_{12}	$-f_{11}$	0	0	0	$-e_{22}$	0	e_{12}
f_{22}	f_{22}	$-f_{21}$	0	0	e_{22}	0	$-e_{12}$	0

An embedding of the group G_2 into SO_7 - which gives an irreducible representation in all characteristics but two - can be seen as follows: let us consider its action on the vector space

$$(4.2) \quad V := e^\perp = \{(u, v) : \det(1 + u) - \det(u) = 1\} = \{(u, v) : u_{11} + u_{22} = 0\}.$$

By [SV00, Lemma 2.3.1], a maximal torus of G - with respect to the basis $(e_{12}, e_{21}, f_{11}, e_{11} - e_{22}, f_{12}, f_{21}, f_{22})$ of W - acts on V as

$$\mathbf{G}_m^2 \ni (\xi, \eta) \longmapsto \text{diag}(\xi\eta, \xi^{-1}\eta^{-1}, \eta^{-1}, 1, \xi, \xi^{-1}, \eta) \in \text{GL}_7$$

Let us re-parameterize it with $\xi = a$, $\eta = ab$, this gives the torus

$$\mathbf{G}_m^2 \ni (a, b) \longmapsto \text{diag}(a^2b, a^{-2}b^{-1}, a^{-1}b^{-1}, 1, a, a^{-1}, ab) =: t \in \text{GL}_7,$$

and the basis of simple roots we fix is $\alpha_1(t) := a$ and $\alpha_2(t) := b$. Such a torus acts on V with the following weight spaces :

$$\begin{aligned} V_0 &= k(e_{11} - e_{22}), V_{\alpha_1} = kf_{12}, V_{-\alpha_1} = kf_{21}, V_{\alpha_1+\alpha_2} = kf_{22}, \\ V_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2} &= kf_{11}, V_{2\alpha_1+\alpha_2} = ke_{12}, V_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2} = ke_{21}, \end{aligned}$$

which correspond to 0 and the short roots. Re-arranging V as

$$(4.3) \quad V = kf_{12} \oplus kf_{11} \oplus ke_{12} \oplus k(e_{11} - e_{22}) \oplus ke_{21} \oplus kf_{22} \oplus kf_{21}$$

gives the maximal torus T

$$(4.4) \quad \mathbf{G}_m^2 \ni (a, b) \longmapsto \text{diag}(a, a^{-1}b^{-1}, a^2b, 1, a^{-2}b^{-1}, ab, a^{-1}) = t \in T \subset \text{GL}_7.$$

This way, T can be identified with the maximal torus in [He08, page 13]: in his description of the embedding $G \subset \text{GL}_7$, the group G is generated by the two following copies of GL_2 ,

$$\theta_1: A \longmapsto \begin{pmatrix} A & & & & & & \\ & \text{Sym}^2(A) \det A^{-1} & & & & & \\ & & A & & & & \\ & & & & & & \\ & & & & & & \\ & & & & & & \\ & & & & & & \end{pmatrix} \quad \text{and} \quad \theta_2: B \longmapsto \begin{pmatrix} \det B^{-1} & & & & & & \\ & \tilde{B} & & & & & \\ & & 1 & & & & \\ & & & B & & & \\ & & & & & & \\ & & & & & & \\ & & & & & & \det B \end{pmatrix},$$

where

$$\tilde{A} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} {}^t A^{-1} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}.$$

However, in characteristic $p = 2$, due to the fact that $e \in V$ and that G acts on the quotient $W = V/ke$, these become the following two copies embedded in $\text{GL}(W) = \text{GL}_6$:

$$\theta_1: A \longmapsto \begin{pmatrix} A & & & & & \\ & A^{(1)} \det A^{-1} & & & & \\ & & A & & & \\ & & & & & \\ & & & & & \\ & & & & & \end{pmatrix} \quad \text{and} \quad \theta_2: B \longmapsto \begin{pmatrix} \det B^{-1} & & & & & \\ & B & & & & \\ & & B & & & \\ & & & & & \\ & & & & & \\ & & & & & \det B \end{pmatrix},$$

where $A^{(1)}$ denotes the Frobenius twist applied to A .

Lemma 4.1. *The subgroups $\theta_1(\text{GL}_2)$ and $\theta_2(\text{GL}_2)$ have root system with positive root respectively $\beta_1 := 2\alpha_1 + \alpha_2$ and $\beta_2 := -3\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2$.*

Proof. See the computation of the root homomorphisms associated respectively to β_1 and β_2 , done in Remark 4.2: these are respectively the intersection of $\theta_1(\text{GL}_2)$ and $\theta_2(\text{GL}_2)$ with the upper triangular matrices of GL_7 . \square

Let us remark that $\{\beta_1, \beta_2\}$ is indeed a basis for the root system of type G_2 , with corresponding set of positive roots being

$$-3\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2, \alpha_1 - \alpha_2, -\alpha_2, \alpha_2, 3\alpha_1 + \alpha_2, 2\alpha_1 + \alpha_2$$

and with Borel subgroup given by the intersection of G with the upper triangular matrices in GL_7 .

4.2. Root subgroups. Let us move on to the explicit computation of some of the root subgroups in type G_2 . As before, we will do everything considering the action on a 7-dimensional vector space - the orthogonal of the identity element of \mathbb{O} - so that the computations hold in any characteristic, then at the end we will summarize what we get in characteristic 2.

Let us consider the group G acting on the vector space V arranged as in (4.3). Denoting as x_0, \dots, x_6 the coordinates on V , the norm becomes

$$(4.5) \quad q(x) = -x_3^2 - x_2x_4 - x_1x_5 + x_0x_6,$$

while the maximal torus T given in (4.4) acts on V through this table of characters

$$(4.6) \quad \begin{array}{|c|c|c|c|c|c|c|} \hline 1 & a^2b & a^{-1}b^{-1} & a & a^3b & b^{-1} & a^2 \\ \hline a^{-2}b^{-1} & 1 & a^{-3}b^{-2} & a^{-1}b^{-1} & a & a^{-2}b^{-2} & b^{-1} \\ \hline ab & a^3b^2 & 1 & a^2b & a^4b^2 & a & a^3b \\ \hline a^{-1} & ab & a^{-2}b^{-1} & 1 & a^2b & a^{-1}b^{-1} & a \\ \hline a^{-3}b^{-1} & a^{-1} & a^{-4}b^{-2} & a^{-2}b^{-1} & 1 & a^{-3}b^{-2} & a^{-1}b^{-1} \\ \hline b & a^2b^2 & a^{-1} & ab & a^3b^2 & 1 & a^2b \\ \hline a^{-2} & b & a^{-3}b^{-1} & a^{-1} & ab & a^{-2}b^{-1} & 1 \\ \hline \end{array}$$

The idea is the following: we know that - for any root $\gamma \in \Phi$ - the root subgroup $U_\gamma \subset G$ is determined by being the unique subgroup of $\text{GL}(V)$ (resp. $\text{GL}(W)$ in characteristic 2), which is smooth, unipotent, is acted on by T via the character γ , and whose elements are automorphisms of octonions. We will impose some of these necessary condition - such as $u_\gamma(\lambda)$ being an isometry for any $\lambda \in \mathbf{G}_a$ - to determine the root homomorphism $u_\gamma: \mathbf{G}_a \rightarrow U_\gamma$.

• First, let us consider the root α_1 . By (4.6) and the condition for u_{α_1} to be a group homomorphism, there exist some constants $\eta_1, \dots, \eta_5 \in k$ such that for any $\lambda \in \mathbf{G}_a$, $u_{\alpha_1}(\lambda)$ acts on V as

$$\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & \eta_1\lambda & 0 & 0 & \eta_5\lambda^2 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & \eta_2\lambda & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & \eta_3\lambda & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & \eta_4\lambda \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}.$$

Moreover, $u_{\alpha_1}(\lambda)$ being an isometry means, by (4.5), that

$$\begin{aligned} q(x) &= q(u_{\alpha_1}(\lambda) \cdot x) = q(x_0 + \eta_1\lambda x_3 + \eta_5\lambda^2 x_6, x_1 + \eta_2\lambda x_4, x_2 + \eta_3\lambda x_5, x_3 + \eta_4\lambda x_6, x_4, x_5, x_6) \\ &= q(x) + (-2\eta_4 + \eta_1)\lambda x_3 x_6 + (\eta_5 - \eta_4^2)\lambda^2 x_6^2 - (\eta_3 + \eta_2)\lambda x_4 x_5, \end{aligned}$$

hence $\eta_1 = 2\eta_4$, $\eta_5 = \eta_4^2$ and $\eta_2 = -\eta_3$. This still leaves two independent parameters η_3 and η_4 instead of one, so let us also impose the condition of $u_{\alpha_1}(\lambda)$ respecting the product $f_{22}e_{21} = -f_{21}$ - see (4.1) :

$$\begin{aligned} (u_{\alpha_1}(\lambda) \cdot f_{22})(u_{\alpha_1}(\lambda) \cdot e_{21}) &= u_{\alpha_1}(\lambda) \cdot (-f_{21}) \\ (\eta_3\lambda(e_{11} - e_{22}) + f_{22})(-\eta_3\lambda f_{11} + e_{21}) &= -\eta_4^2\lambda^2 f_{12} - \eta_4\lambda(e_{11} - e_{22}) - f_{21} \\ -\eta_3^2\lambda^2 f_{12} - \eta_3\lambda(e_{11} - e_{22}) - f_{21} &= -\eta_4^2\lambda^2 f_{12} - \eta_4\lambda(e_{11} - e_{22}) - f_{21}, \end{aligned}$$

implying $\eta_3 = \eta_4$. Let us reparametrise the root homomorphism such that $\eta_3 = 1$: this, together with an analogous computation for $-\alpha_1$, gives the desired representations, of the

form

$$u_{\alpha_1} : \lambda \mapsto \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 2\lambda & 0 & 0 & \lambda^2 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & -\lambda & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & \lambda & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & \lambda \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, \quad u_{-\alpha_1} : \lambda \mapsto \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ \lambda & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \lambda & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -\lambda & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ \lambda^2 & 0 & 0 & 2\lambda & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}.$$

• Let us consider the root α_2 . By (4.6) and the condition for u_{α_2} to be a group homomorphism, there exist some constants η_1 and $\eta_2 \in k$ such that for any $\lambda \in \mathbf{G}_a$, $u_{\alpha_2}(\lambda)$ acts on V as

$$u_{\alpha_2}(\lambda) \cdot x = (x_0, x_1, x_2, x_3, x_4, \eta_1 \lambda x_0 x_5, \eta_2 \lambda x_1 + x_6).$$

Moreover, the isometry condition means that

$$\begin{aligned} q(x) &= q(u_{\alpha_2}(\lambda) \cdot x) = -x_3^2 - x_2 x_4 - \eta_1 \lambda x_0 x_1 - x_1 x_5 + \eta_2 \lambda x_0 x_1 + x_0 x_6 \\ &= q(x) + (\eta_2 - \eta_1) \lambda x_0 x_1, \end{aligned}$$

hence $\eta_1 = \eta_2$. As before, we can conclude that the associated root subgroups are of the form

$$u_{\alpha_2} : \lambda \mapsto \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ \lambda & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & \lambda & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, \quad u_{-\alpha_2} : \lambda \mapsto \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \lambda & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \lambda \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}.$$

• Let us consider the root $2\alpha_1 + \alpha_2$. By (4.6) and the condition for $u_{2\alpha_1 + \alpha_2}$ to be a group homomorphism, there exist some constants $\eta_1, \dots, \eta_5 \in k$ such that for any $\lambda \in \mathbf{G}_a$, $u_{2\alpha_1 + \alpha_2}(\lambda)$ acts on V as

$$\begin{pmatrix} 1 & \eta_1 \lambda & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & \eta_2 \lambda & \eta_5 \lambda^2 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & \eta_3 \lambda & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & \eta_4 \lambda \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}.$$

Moreover, the isometry condition implies

$$\begin{aligned} q(u_{2\alpha_1 + \alpha_2}(\lambda) \cdot x) &= q(x_0 + \eta_1 \lambda x_1, x_1, x_2 + \eta_2 \lambda x_3 + \eta_5 \lambda^2 x_4, x_3 + \eta_3 \lambda x_4, x_4, x_5 + \eta_4 \lambda x_6, x_6) \\ &= q(x) + (\eta_1 - \eta_4) \lambda x_1 x_6 - (\eta_3^2 + \eta_5) \lambda^2 x_4^2 - (2\eta_3 - \eta_2) \lambda x_3 x_4 = q(x), \end{aligned}$$

hence $\eta_1 = \eta_4$, $\eta_5 = -\eta_3^2$ and $\eta_2 = 2\eta_3$. This still leaves two independent parameters η_3 and η_4 instead of one, so let us also impose the condition of $u_{2\alpha_1 + \alpha_2}(\lambda)$ respecting the product $f_{22}e_{21} = -f_{21}$:

$$\begin{aligned} (u_{2\alpha_1 + \alpha_2}(\lambda) \cdot f_{22})(u_{2\alpha_1 + \alpha_2}(\lambda) \cdot e_{21}) &= u_{2\alpha_1 + \alpha_2}(\lambda) \cdot (-f_{21}) \\ f_{22}(-\eta_3^2 \lambda^2 e_{12} + \eta_3 \lambda (e_{11} - e_{22}) + e_{21}) &= -\eta_4 \lambda f_{22} + f_{21} \\ \eta_3 \lambda f_{22} - f_{21} &= -\eta_4 \lambda f_{22} - f_{21}, \end{aligned}$$

implying $\eta_3 = -\eta_4$, so we can conclude that the associated root subgroups are of the form

$$u_{2\alpha_1+\alpha_2}: \lambda \mapsto \begin{pmatrix} 1 & \lambda & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 2\lambda & -\lambda^2 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & -\lambda & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & \lambda \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, u_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}: \lambda \mapsto \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ \lambda & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -\lambda & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -\lambda^2 & 2\lambda & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \lambda & 1 \end{pmatrix}.$$

• Let us consider the root $\alpha_1 + \alpha_2$. By (4.6) and the condition for $u_{\alpha_1+\alpha_2}$ to be a group homomorphism, there exist some constants $\eta_1, \dots, \eta_5 \in k$ such that for any $\lambda \in \mathbf{G}_a$, $u_{\alpha_1+\alpha_2}(\lambda)$ acts on V as

$$\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ \eta_1\lambda & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \eta_2\lambda & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \eta_5\lambda^2 & 0 & \eta_3\lambda & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \eta_4\lambda & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}.$$

Moreover, the isometry condition implies

$$\begin{aligned} q(x) &= q(u_{\alpha_1+\alpha_2}(\lambda) \cdot x) = q(x_0, x_1, \eta_1\lambda x_0 + x_2, \eta_2\lambda x_1 + x_3, x_4, \eta_5\lambda^2 x_1 + \eta_3\lambda x_3 + x_5, \eta_4\lambda x_4 + x_6) \\ &= q(x) - (2\eta_2 + \eta_3)\lambda x_1 x_3 + (\eta_4 - \eta_1)\lambda x_0 x_4 - (\eta_2^2 + \eta_5)\lambda^2 x_1^2, \end{aligned}$$

hence $\eta_3 = -2\eta_2$, $\eta_1 = \eta_4$ and $\eta_5 = -\eta_2^2$. Reasoning as in the above cases, let us also impose the condition of $u_{\alpha_1+\alpha_2}(\lambda)$ respecting the product $f_{11}f_{21} = -e_{21}$:

$$\begin{aligned} (u_{\alpha_1+\alpha_2}(\lambda) \cdot f_{11})(u_{\alpha_1+\alpha_2}(\lambda) \cdot f_{21}) &= u_{\alpha_1+\alpha_2}(\lambda) \cdot (-e_{21}) \\ (f_{11} + \eta_2\lambda(e_{11} - e_{22}) - \eta_2^2\lambda^2 f_{22})f_{21} &= -e_{21} - \eta_4\lambda f_{21} \\ -e_{21} + \eta_2\lambda f_{21} &= -e_{21} - \eta_4\lambda f_{21}, \end{aligned}$$

implying $\eta_2 = -\eta_4$. Reparametrizing and doing an analogous computation for the negative root allows to conclude that the root subgroups are as follows:

$$u_{\alpha_1+\alpha_2}: \lambda \mapsto \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ \lambda & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -\lambda & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -\lambda^2 & 0 & 2\lambda & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \lambda & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, u_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2}: \lambda \mapsto \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & \lambda & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 2\lambda & 0 & -\lambda^2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & -\lambda & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & \lambda \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}.$$

• As last computation, let us consider the root $-3\alpha_1 - 2\alpha_2$. By (4.6) and the condition for $u_{-3\alpha_1-2\alpha_2}$ to be a group homomorphism, there exist some constants η_1 and $\eta_2 \in k$ such that for any $\lambda \in \mathbf{G}_a$, $u_{-3\alpha_1-2\alpha_2}(\lambda)$ acts on V as

$$u_{-3\alpha_1-2\alpha_2}(\lambda) \cdot x = (x_0, x_1 + \eta_1\lambda x_2, x_2, x_3, x_4 + \eta_2\lambda x_5, x_5, x_6).$$

The isometry condition implies

$$\begin{aligned} q(x) &= q(u_{-3\alpha_1-2\alpha_2}(\lambda) \cdot x) = -x_3^2 - x_2 x_4 - \eta_2\lambda x_2 x_5 - x_1 x_5 - \eta_1\lambda x_2 x_5 + x_0 x_6 \\ &= q(x) + (\eta_2 + \eta_1)\lambda x_2 x_5, \end{aligned}$$

hence $\eta_2 = -\eta_1$ and we can conclude that the root subgroups have the following form :

(4.7)

$$u_{-3\alpha_1-2\alpha_2} : \lambda \mapsto \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & \lambda & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & -\lambda & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, \quad u_{3\alpha_1+2\alpha_2} : \lambda \mapsto \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -\lambda & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \lambda & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}.$$

Remark 4.2. Let us recall that in characteristic 2 the group G acts on $W = V/ke$, giving an embedding $G \subset \text{Sp}_6$: we list below what the root subspaces we need become in that case.

$$\begin{aligned} u_{\alpha_1}(\lambda) &= \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \lambda^2 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & \lambda & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & \lambda & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, & u_{-\alpha_1}(\lambda) &= \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \lambda & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \lambda & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ \lambda^2 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \\ u_{\alpha_2}(\lambda) &= \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \lambda & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \lambda \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, & u_{-\alpha_2}(\lambda) &= \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ \lambda & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & \lambda & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \\ u_{2\alpha_1+\alpha_2}(\lambda) &= \begin{pmatrix} 1 & \lambda & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & \lambda^2 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & \lambda \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, & u_{-2\alpha_1-\alpha_2}(\lambda) &= \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ \lambda & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \lambda^2 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \lambda & 1 \end{pmatrix} \\ u_{\alpha_1+\alpha_2}(\lambda) &= \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ \lambda & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \lambda^2 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & \lambda & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, & u_{-\alpha_1-\alpha_2}(\lambda) &= \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & \lambda & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & \lambda^2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & \lambda \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \\ u_{3\alpha_1+2\alpha_2}(\lambda) &= \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \lambda & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & \lambda & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, & u_{-3\alpha_1-2\alpha_2}(\lambda) &= \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & \lambda & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & \lambda & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \end{aligned}$$

REFERENCES

- [BB73] A. Bialynicki-Birula, *Some theorems on actions of algebraic groups*, Ann. of Math. (2) 98 (1973), 480–497.
- [BT72] A. Borel, J. Tits, *Compléments à l'article « Groupes réductifs »*, Inst. Hautes Études Sci. Publ. Math. No. 41 (1972), 253–276.
- [Bou68] N. Bourbaki, *Éléments de mathématique. Fasc. XXXIV. Groupes et algèbres de Lie. Chapitre IV: Groupes de Coxeter et systèmes de Tits. Chapitre V: Groupes engendrés par des réflexions. Chapitre VI: systèmes de racines.*, Actualités Scientifiques et Industrielles, No. 1337 Hermann, Paris 1968
- [Bri02] M. Brion, *The cone of effective one-cycles of certain G -varieties. A tribute to C. S. Seshadri (Chennai, 2002)*, 180–198, Trends Math., Birkhäuser, Basel, 2003.
- [Bri17] M. Brion, *Some structure theorems for algebraic groups. Algebraic groups: structure and actions*, 53–126, Proc. Sympos. Pure Math., 94, Amer. Math. Soc., Providence, RI, 2017.
- [BSU13] M. Brion, P. Samuel, V. Uma, *Lectures on the structure of algebraic groups and geometric applications*, CMI Lecture Series in Mathematics, 1. Hindustan Book Agency, New Delhi; Chennai Mathematical Institute (CMI), Chennai, 2013. viii+120 pp.
- [CGP15] B. Conrad, O. Gaber, G. Prasad, *Pseudo-reductive groups. Second edition*, New Mathematical Monographs, 26. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 2015. xxiv+665 pp.
- [Deb01] O. Debarre, *Higher-dimensional algebraic geometry*, Universitext. Springer-Verlag, New York, 2001. xiv+233 pp.
- [Dem77] M. Demazure, *Automorphismes et déformations des variétés de Borel*, Invent. Math. 39 (1977), no. 2, 179–186.
- [DG70] M. Demazure, P. Gabriel, *Groupes algébriques. Tome I: Géométrie algébrique, généralités, groupes commutatifs.*, Avec un appendice Corps de classes local par Michiel Hazewinkel. Masson and Cie, Éditeurs, Paris; North-Holland Publishing Co., Amsterdam, 1970. xxvi+700 pp.
- [HL93] W. Haboush, N. Lauritzen, *Varieties of unseparated flags*, Linear algebraic groups and their representations (Los Angeles, CA, 1992), 35–57, Contemp. Math., 153, Amer. Math. Soc., Providence, RI, 1993.
- [Har77] R. Hartshorne, *Algebraic geometry*, Graduate Texts in Mathematics, No. 52. Springer-Verlag, New York-Heidelberg, 1977. xvi+496 pp.
- [He08] J. Heinloth, *Bounds for Behrend’s conjecture on the canonical reduction*, Int. Math. Res. Not. IMRN 2008, no. 14, Art. ID rnn045, 17 pp.
- [Hu78] J. E. Humphreys, *Introduction to Lie algebras and representation theory. Second printing, revised.*, Graduate Texts in Mathematics, 9. Springer-Verlag, New York-Berlin, 1978. xii+171
- [Ja03] J.C. Jantzen, *Representations of algebraic groups. Second edition*, Mathematical Surveys and Monographs, 107. American Mathematical Society, Providence, RI, 2003. xiv+576 pp.
- [Lau93] N. Lauritzen, *Splitting properties of complete homogeneous spaces*, J. Algebra 162 (1993), no. 1, 178–193.
- [Laz83] R. Lazarsfeld, *Some applications of the theory of positive vector bundles. Complete intersections*, (Acireale, 1983), 29–61, Lecture Notes in Math., 1092, Springer, Berlin, 1984.
- [MO67] H. Matsumura, F. Oort, *Representability of group functors, and automorphisms of algebraic schemes*, Invent. Math. 4 (1967), 1–25.
- [Mil17] J.S. Milne, *Algebraic groups: the theory of group schemes of finite type over a field*, Cambridge Studies in Advanced Mathematics, 170. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 2017. xvi+644 pp.
- [SV00] T.A. Springer, F.D. Veldkamp, *Octonions, Jordan Algebras and Exceptional Groups*, Springer Monographs in Mathematics. Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 2000. viii+208 pp.
- [Sp98] T.A. Springer, *Linear algebraic groups. Second edition*, Progress in Mathematics, 9. Birkhäuser Boston, Inc., Boston, MA, 1998.
- [Ste99] R. Steinberg, *The isomorphism and isogeny theorems for reductive algebraic groups*, Journal of Algebra 216.1 (1999): 366–383.
- [Str04] H. Strade, *Simple Lie algebras over fields of positive characteristic I: Structure theory*, De Gruyter Expositions in Mathematics, 38. Walter de Gruyter and Co., Berlin, 2004. viii+540 pp.
- [Wen93] C. Wenzel, *Classification of all parabolic subgroup-schemes of a reductive linear algebraic group over an algebraically closed field.*, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc. 337 (1993), no. 1, 211–218.
- Email address: matilde.maccan@univ-rennes.fr*